

1875

Received of the Treasurer of the
County of ...

the sum of ... Dollars
for ...

Witness my hand and seal
this ... day of ...

County Clerk

Reproduced by DUOPAGE process
in the United States of America

MICRO PHOTO INC.
Cleveland 12, Ohio

JONATHAN SWIFT

A BIOGRAPHICAL AND CRITICAL STUDY

BY

JOHN CHURTON COLLINS

AUTHOR OF 'BOLINGBROKE: AN HISTORICAL STUDY' ETC.

*Ὁ τῶν ἄλλων ἐπεπωλεῖτο στίχος ἀνδρῶν.
Ἐγχεῖ τ', ἄορί τε, μεγάλοισι τε χερμαδίοισιν.*



A NEW EDITION

LONDON

CHATTO & WINBUS

GAM

1902

S.

94

OVERLAW
COLLEGE
LIBRARY

Trustee
9.8.5.
70

(left) 20490

PRINTED BY
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO. LTD., NEW-STREET SQUARE
LONDON

827.5

S 77 552 C

W. 1950
100 100
YIA 1911

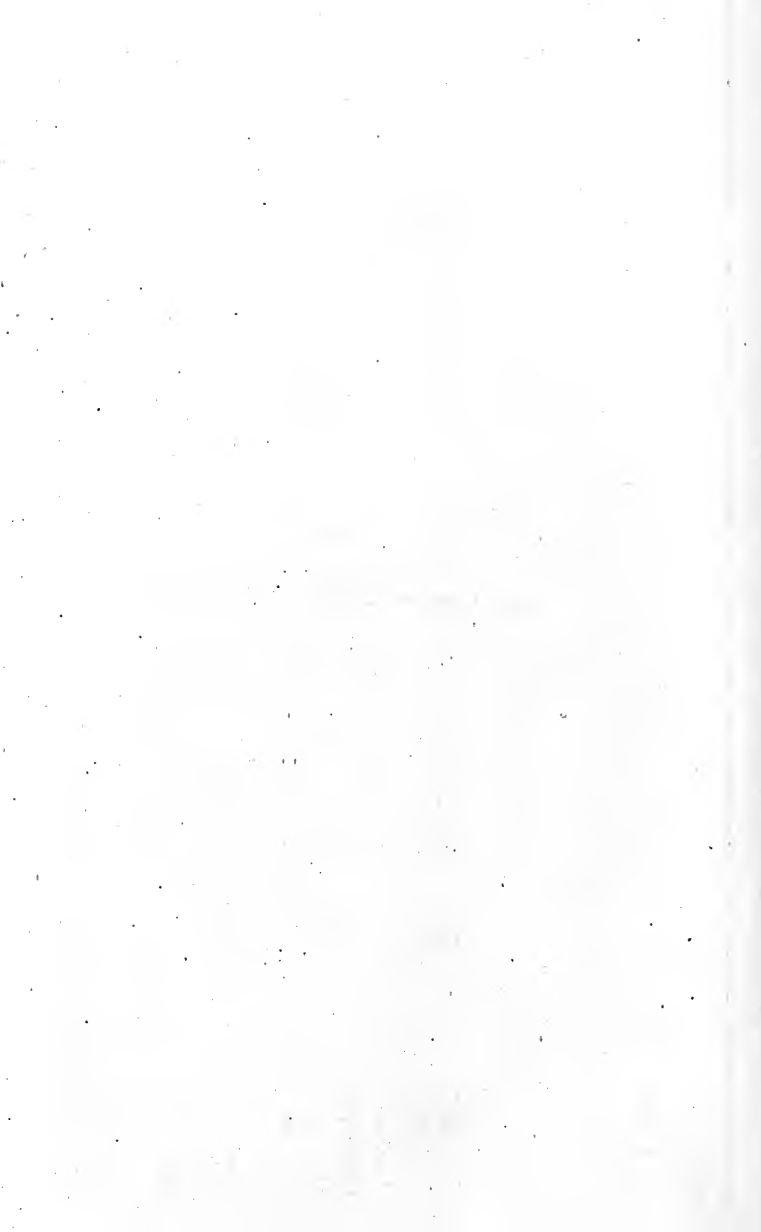
940 s

C71

TO MY MOTHER

I INSCRIBE

THIS VOLUME



P R E F A C E

DURING the last hundred years, and particularly during the last twenty years, so much has been written about Swift that some apology may seem necessary for the appearance of another volume on the subject. But to apologise for a very deliberate act would be affectation. Those who may do me the honour to read this book will, I think, find that, however open to question my views of the actions and character of this extraordinary man may be, they are at least the result of very careful study, and that if I have added little, I have added at all events something, to our knowledge of the details of his biography.

I hold no brief for Swift, but I have endeavoured to do him justice where justice has been either withheld or too grudgingly allowed. I have endeavoured to vindicate the consistency of his political principles, his character in all that related to practice and duty as a churchman, the purity of his motives as well as his wisdom as an Irish Agitator, and his conduct with regard to Stella and Vanessa.

In analysing his temper and his peculiarities I

have laid great stress upon one point. Ten years ago, when I first began to study Swift, I felt convinced that not only was he never insane in the proper acceptation of the term, but that the maladies which he himself regarded as the germs and symptoms of gradually developing disease, and which had been so regarded by all his biographers, had in truth no connection with the state into which he latterly sank. I accordingly wrote to Dr. Bucknill and placed Swift's case fully before him, and he replied in a letter corroborating my conjecture, and that letter he has kindly allowed me to print.

It remains for me to thank Mr. Murray for allowing me to draw very largely on two articles contributed by me some years ago to the *Quarterly Review*, and Mr. Percy Wallace for his valuable assistance in helping me to see this volume through the press. And I should like also to take this opportunity of thanking the officials of the British Museum and the superintendent of the Dyce and Forster Library for the more than courtesy with which they have always responded on this and on other occasions to my many requests for assistance.

LONDON: April 30, 1893.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I

BIOGRAPHICAL SOURCES AND BIOGRAPHERS

	PAGE
Swift better known to us than any other writer of his age	1
His autobiographical writings	1
His biographers—their merits and defects:—	
Orrery	2
Delany	3
Deane Swift	4
Sheridan!	4
Monck-Berkeley	4
Barrett	5
Scott	5
Monck Mason	6
Forster	7
Mr. Henry Craik	10

CHAPTER II

INJUSTICE OF THE POPULAR ESTIMATE OF SWIFT

Swift a greatly maligned man	11
Absence of excuse for this false estimate	11
His benevolence and kindness	12
His real attitude towards religion	13
The prevalent false view of his character due to four brilliant and bitter assailants—Jeffrey, Macaulay, Stanhope, Thackeray	15

JONATHAN SWIFT

CHAPTER III

THE EARLY LIFE OF SWIFT

	PAGE
His ancestry and parentage—purely English	17
His birth	18
His boyhood	20
His career at Trinity College, Dublin—his irregularities—their cause	21
His flight to England	24
His mother—her character	25
His first residence at Moor Park—his position in Temple's house	26
His miserable disposition	29
His tutorship to Esther Johnson	30
His early poems—their extreme badness	30
His departure from Moor Park	31
His ordination	32
His position as a churchman	32
His championship of the Church of England—his services to his order	32
His character and deportment	31
His life at Kilroot	36
The episode of 'Varina' (Miss Waryng)	36
His second residence at Moor Park	38
His studious industry—his favourite authors	38
The Phalaris Controversy	40
The <i>Battle of the Books</i> —the importance of this work	41
The <i>Tale of a Tub</i> —its purpose, methods, and characteristics	43
Its probable indebtedness to a sermon by Archbishop Sharp	47
Death of Temple	48
Swift's second departure from Moor Park	49

CHAPTER IV

LIFE BETWEEN 1700 AND 1710

Degraded position of men of letters at this time	50
Swift's chaplaincy to Berkeley	51
His return to England	53
His first entry into political controversy	53

CONTENTS

xi

	PAGE
His attack on the sectaries	54
His eminent position in Whig literary circles	55
His disappointment in the matter of preferment	56
His ecclesiastical and political views and satires—his intolerance of Dissent	57
Partridge's almanacks—'Isaac Bickerstaff's' pamphlets	61
Death of Swift's mother	63
His delegacy to England in connection with First Fruits and Tenths	64
His formal breach with the Whigs—the circumstances under which this step was taken—its justification	65

CHAPTER V

DURING THE ADMINISTRATION OF HARLEY, 1710—1714

I

Peculiar position of Swift during these years	69
His haughtiness—his power of will and intellect—his personal appearance and manner	69
His renewed acquaintance with Esther Johnson—her personal appearance and character	72
Swift's attitude with regard to women	75
Esther Johnson's settlement near him in Ireland—the nature of their intercourse	76
The <i>Journal to Stella</i>	78
Political complications—the war with France	79
Swift editor of the <i>Examiner</i> —its importance in his hands—his great services to Harley	80
Minor pamphlets—negotiations for peace	85
The <i>Conduct of the Allies</i> —its immediate popularity and influence	88

II

The Brothers' Club—its members—Swift's pre-eminence among them	89
Proposal for an Academy for fixing and correcting the English language—its failure	92
The Scriblerus Club—its members—Congreve, Pope, Atterbury, Gay, Parnell, Arbuthnot, Fortescue—their several charac- teristics	94
'Martinus Scriblerus'—the joint satire of the Club	101

III

	PAGE
Political factions—virulence of the struggle	102
Meeting of Parliament—success of the Whigs	103
Swift's literary activity	105
<i>The Remarks on the Barrier Treaty</i>	106
<i>Some Advice to the October Club</i>	107
<i>The Letter to a Whig Lord</i>	109
Miscellaneous lampoons and other works	110

IV

Immense influence of Swift at this time	111
His signal services to his party long unrewarded—his successive disappointments	112
His appointment to the Deanery of St. Patrick's	115
His insulting reception in Dublin	116
His return to London	116
His breach with Steele	116
His attack on Burnet	118
<i>The Public Spirit of the Whigs</i>	119
Feud between Oxford and Bolingbroke	119
Integrity of Swift during the crisis—his political views	120
Death of Queen Anne	122
Return of Swift to Dublin—his miserable condition at this time	123

CHAPTER VI

SWIFT IN IRELAND, 1714—1720

I

Difficult position of Swift in Dublin	125
His loyalty to Oxford	126
His anti-Jacobite views	128
Political pamphlets	129
<i>The Memoirs of the Last Four Years of the Queen</i>	130
Swift's manner of life at this time	132

II

The Vanhomrighs	133
Hester Vanhomrigh's passion for Swift	134
His conduct towards her	135

	PAGE
<i>Cadenus and Vanessa</i>	136
Her settlement in Dublin	137
Her departure from Dublin—her death	139
Distortions of the story of their acquaintance—the accounts of Orrery, Sheridan, and Scott—the charges against Swift examined	139
The true character of his relations towards her	142
His alleged marriage with Esther Johnson—important bearing of this question on his whole career	146
Documents relative to this matter—their strong evidence against the marriage	147
External evidence equally conclusive to the same effect	150
The evidence in its favour examined	151
Summary of this question—no satisfactory evidence for the marriage—strong testimony against it—the general verdict of the world	156

CHAPTER VII

IRISH POLITICS

I

Swift and Irish affairs	158
Condition of Ireland at this time—her natural advantages—her treatment by England	159
Famine and pestilence	161
Feuds and enmities—the Middlemen—the provincial gentry	163
Crushing statutes of the English Parliament—the degraded Protestant hierarchy	165
Swift's indignation	167
His <i>Proposal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufactures</i>	167
Arrest and trial of the printer	168
Swift's tact and sagacity	169
The proposed National Bank—the <i>Essay on English Bubbles</i> — the 'Swearer's Bank'	170
Brigandism in Dublin—the <i>Last Speech and Dying Words of</i> <i>Ebenezer Elliston</i>	171
Scarcity of copper coins—Wood's patent	172
The Drapier Letters—the first	176
The second	178

	PAGE
The third	181
Great excitement throughout Ireland	183
Grafton succeeded in the Lord-Lieutenancy by Carteret	183
The fourth Drapier Letter	184
The fifth	186
The sixth	187
Withdrawal of the patent—wild excitement throughout Ireland —Swift the national idol	188

II

Swift's ecclesiastical views—his violent attacks on the Whig Bishops	189
The Modus Bill—Swift's vehement hostility to the Noncon- formists	191
His scheme for the formation of an Irish National Church	193
His endeavours to improve the condition of the inferior clergy	193
His personal misery—his misanthropy	194
His friendship with Sheridan	195

CHAPTER VIII

VISIT TO ENGLAND

Swift's visit to England	197
His interview with Walpole	199
<i>Gulliver's Travels</i> —the elaborate propriety of the work—its scrupulous accuracy	201
Its indebtedness to preceding works	204
Its object	208
Not a philosophic estimate of humanity or criticism of life	208
Immediate success of the book in all circles	212
Departure of Swift for Dublin—illness of Esther Johnson	214
His return to England—literary and political activity	215
Death of George I.	217
Last departure from England—diary written at Holyhead	217
Death of Esther Johnson—Swift's grief—the <i>Memoir and Character of Esther Johnson</i>	218

CHAPTER IX

LIFE IN IRELAND—LAST DAYS AND DEATH

I

	PAGE
Melancholy character of Swift's last years	220
Deplorable and hopeless condition of Ireland in 1729	221
The <i>Short View of the State of Ireland</i> —other Irish pamphlets.	223
The tithe question—the case of Throp—the <i>Legion Club</i>	225

II

Swift's miscellaneous pamphlets of this period	227
His poems	229
His correspondence	230
His activity in benevolence—his immense popularity in Dublin .	231
His miserable condition—rapid failure of his mind—his irritability and ferocity	233
His death	236

CHAPTER X

CHARACTERISTICS

I

The problem of Swift's malady—false views on the subject—its symptoms	237
Views of Dr. Beddoes—of Scott—of Sir William Wilde—of Dr. Bucknill	239
Swift's temper—his nervous organisation—his essential defects—his conception of human nature—of religion	241
His attitude towards Christianity—apparent hopelessness of his creed—his reticence on this subject	245
His utter lack of sentiment—his reference of all questions to pure intellect	248
Comparison of Swift with Hobbes	251
Cynical character of the age in all its aspects—society, thought, poetry, fiction	252
Swift's colossal capacities	255

	PAGE
Comparison of Swift with Napoleon	255
His constitutional pride	257
His miserable circumstances	258
His indecency	259

II

Swift's writings an exact reflection of his character	260
His political pamphlets	261
His poems	262
His humorous and satirical writings—their merits and defects	262
His style	264
His irony	264
His attitude towards life and mankind	265
General summary of his characteristics	266

APPENDICES

I

DR. BUCKNILL'S LETTER	269
---------------------------------	-----

II

WRIT 'DE LUNATICO INQUIRENDO' AND REPORT OF THE COM- MISSION	271
INDEX	275

JONATHAN SWIFT

CHAPTER I

BIOGRAPHICAL SOURCES AND BIOGRAPHERS

WE know Swift as we know no other of those eminent men who have made the first four decades of the eighteenth century memorable in literary history. A mere glance at the materials to which his biographers have had access will suffice to show that our information regarding him is of such a kind as to leave scarcely anything to be desired. In the first place, we have his own voluminous correspondence—a correspondence which is, from a biographical point of view, of peculiar value. For, as the majority of his letters are addressed to intimate friends, and were intended only for the eyes of those friends, they exhibit him at times when the mask falls off, even from the most guarded. They were, moreover, written in all moods, without premeditation, without reserve, with the simple object of unburdening his mind, in no case with a view either to publication or to display. ‘When I sit down to write a letter,’ he used to say, ‘I never lean upon my elbow till I have finished it.’ Again, in the *Journal to Stella* he has

not only left a minute record of his daily life during a space of nearly three years, but he has with unrestrained garrulity given expression to whatever happened at the moment to be passing through his thoughts. Nor is this all. He appears, like Johnson and Coleridge, to have found an eccentric pleasure in communing with himself on paper. Many of these soliloquies accident has preserved. They throw the fullest light on his innermost thoughts and feelings. They enable us to determine how far as a Churchman he was honest, how far as a politician he was consistent. His Memoir of himself remains unfortunately a fragment, but enough was completed to illustrate that portion of his career during which his correspondence is most scanty. If to this mass of autobiographical matter be added the innumerable passages in his public writings which elucidate his personal history, the evidence which is of all evidence the least open to suspicion may be regarded as ample even to superabundance.

But, if we owe much to the communicativeness of Swift himself, we owe much also to the communicativeness of his friends. Seven years after his death appeared the famous *Letters* by John, Lord Orrery. The indignation which this work excited among Swift's admirers is well known. The picture which Orrery drew of the Dean was certainly not a pleasing one, and he was accused of having malignantly endeavoured to indemnify himself for the long and not very successful court he paid to Swift when alive by a series of calumnious attacks upon him when dead. Orrery is not entitled to much respect either as a writer or as a man, but he may probably be

acquitted of any such intention. Careful study of the letters must satisfy anyone that they are on the whole what they profess to be. Orrery was, as we learn from other sources, no favourite with Swift. He saw him, therefore, not as he presented himself to the fascinated eye of friendship, but as he presented himself to the impartial eye of critical curiosity. It should be remembered, too, that he knew him only in his decadence. Had Orrery's object been detraction, he would have withheld praise where praise was due, and when direct censure was hazardous he would have resorted to misrepresentation. There is nothing of this spirit discernible. He fully admits the greatness, he fully admits the many virtues, of the man whose portrait he has delineated in such harsh and disagreeable colours. What he painted was what he saw, and what he saw were those features in Swift's character which Delany and Deane Swift have piously done their best to soften or conceal. The truth is that the Swift of Orrery is the Swift of the *Voyage to the Houyhnhnms*, and of the *Verses to the Legion Club*. The *Letters* of Orrery elicited two years afterwards the *Observations* of Delany. Few men were better qualified to speak of Swift than Delany. He had been on terms of intimacy with him for upwards of a quarter of a century. He had been his companion in business and recreation. He had been acquainted with those who had known him from early youth. But Delany's object was eulogy, and for this due allowance must be made. He is, however, one of those witnesses whose loquacity forms a perpetual corrective to their prejudice, and his observations are so rich in reminiscence and anecdote that

a shrewd reader is in little danger of being misled. On the whole, we are inclined to think him the most trustworthy and valuable of all the original authorities. Delany's *Observations* were succeeded, at an interval of a year, by Deane Swift's *Essay*. This is a very disappointing book, though, as the writer was the son-in-law of Mrs. Whiteway, and had as a young man frequently conversed with Swift, what he says of the Dean's character and habits is of importance, and we are moreover indebted to him for many interesting particulars not preserved elsewhere. In Mrs. Pilkington, whose reckless indifference to truth was notorious among all who knew her, and in the compiler of the *Swiftiana*, no one could place any confidence. Hawkesworth's *Memoir*, which was published in 1755, and Johnson's *Life*, which was published in 1781, added little or nothing to what was already known. But in 1784 came out the *Memoir* by Thomas Sheridan—not, of course, the Thomas Sheridan who was the friend of Swift, but the son of Swift's friend. As Sheridan professed to have derived information from his father, and has on the authority of his father, and on the authority also of his own reminiscences as a boy, contributed new biographical matter, his name stands high, and, in spite of the wretched arrangement of his material, deservedly high, among Swift's biographers. With Monck-Berkeley's *Enquiry into the Life of Dean Swift*, prefixed to his *Literary Relics*, published in 1789, we have the last contribution to Swift's biography made by persons intimately acquainted with members of the Dean's circle. But, with the exception of an interesting account of Estlier Johnson, obtained from

her niece, Monck-Berkeley has added little to what was already known.

Then came the era of original research. This may be said to date from Dr. Barrett's *Essay on the Earlier Part of the Life of Swift*, which appeared in 1808. A few years afterwards Scott undertook to embody in a comprehensive narrative the information which lay scattered through the publications to which reference has been made. He did this, and he did much more. Indeed, he produced a work which still remains, with all its defects, the best complete biography of Swift in existence. Scott had many advantages. His editorial labours peculiarly fitted him for the office of biographer, and those labours had been greatly facilitated both by Hawkesworth and by Nichols, whose valuable editions of the Dean's collected writings had appeared at intervals between 1784 and 1808. Scott's own distinguished position in the world of letters gave, moreover, something of a national importance to his work. All who could in any way assist him eagerly proffered their services. Escritaires were ransacked, family archives explored. One gentleman placed at his disposal the correspondence between Swift and Miss Vanhomrigh; another lent him the memoranda of Dr. Lyons. Every year augmented his treasures, and on the completion of his task in 1814 he could boast that he had been able to add upwards of a hundred letters, essays, and poems to those which had already seen the light. In fine, had Scott made the best of his opportunities, had his information been as accurate as it was comprehensive, and had his patience and industry been equal to his genius and literary skill, any other *Life of Swift* would have been

a mere work of supererogation. But, unhappily, his biography of Swift is marred by the same defects which marred his biography of Dryden. It is essentially unthorough—the work of a man, of a very great man, who was contented with doing respectably what with a little more trouble he might have done excellently. Hence, though he is always interesting and always instructive, he is seldom altogether satisfactory. It may be doubted very much whether any reader, after closing Scott's memoir, would have any clear impression of Swift's character. Indeed, to speak plainly, it may be doubted whether Scott had himself taken the trouble to form any clear conception of that character. But his most serious defect is his careless credulity. To the relative value of testimony he appears to attach little importance. He places, for example, the same implicit confidence in statements which rest on no better authority than that of Theophilus Swift and the younger Sheridan, as he places in statements which rest on the authority of Swift's own intimate associates. The result is that what is authentic and what is apocryphal are so interwoven in his narrative, that it is never possible to follow him without distrust and suspicion.

While Scott was busy with Swift, another writer was similarly engaged. In 1819 Monck Mason published his *History and Antiquities of St. Patrick's Cathedral*, a goodly quarto of some five hundred pages. More than half of this formidable volume is devoted to an elaborate biography of Swift. But Monck Mason's quarto never succeeded in gaining the ear of the world, and is now almost forgotten. Indeed, it may be questioned whether even among professed

students of our literature two in twenty are aware of its existence, still less of its rare merits. Nor is this difficult to account for. A more unreadable book was probably never written. It is arranged on that detestable method which originated, I believe, with Bayle—a method the distinguishing feature of which is the combination of the greatest possible confusion. The style is equally repulsive; it is at once harsh and diffuse, as dull as the style of Birch, and as cumbersome as that of Hawkins. But if Monck Mason possesses none of the qualifications of an attractive writer he possesses everything which constitutes an invaluable authority. The extent, the variety, the minuteness of his researches, his patience and acuteness in sifting evidence, his exact acquaintance with the writings of Swift himself, and with the writings of those who have in any way thrown light on Swift's public and private life, his accuracy, his conscientiousness, his impartiality, are above praise. But our obligations to this modest and laborious scholar extend still further. It was he who first proved, and proved, it would seem, conclusively, that no marriage was ever solemnised between Swift and Esther Johnson. To him we owe the first full and satisfactory account of that long and important period in the Dean's career which extends between the publication of the pamphlet on the use of Irish manufactures and the controversy with Boulter.

Such were the principal works bearing on Swift which had, up to 1875, been given to the world. In that year appeared the first volume of a biography which would probably have superseded all that had gone before, but which was unhappily destined to

remain a fragment. Of Mr. Forster's enthusiasm and industry it would be superfluous to speak. His devotion to Swift resembles the devotion of Lipsius to Tacitus, and of Basil Montagu and Mr. Spedding to Bacon. It amounted to a passion. To link his name with the name of a man whom he had persuaded himself to believe one of the monarchs of human kind was, till the last hours of his life, his most cherished object. To zeal such as this we owe perhaps nine-tenths of what is best in Biography and History. But Mr. Forster's zeal was not always a source of strength. It led him, in the language of Shakespeare, to monster nothings, to attach undue importance to the most trivial particulars. Nothing that Swift did or said was in his estimation too unimportant to be chronicled. He pounced with ludicrous avidity on matter which was not merely worthless in itself, but of no value in its bearings on Swift. The fact that a document had never before appeared in print was, in his eyes, a sufficient justification for its appearing in his pages. The fact that preceding biographers had in any portion of their narrative been concise is the signal for Mr. Forster to become preposterously diffuse. A biographer can, indeed, never be too full when he is treating of anything which has reference to what is in his hero distinctive and peculiar. But there are many things in which great men and little men must necessarily act alike. There is much in the constitution even of the most exalted personages which is common to all mankind. On these points a judicious biographer will be least communicative; but on these points Mr. Forster dilates at insufferable length. That Swift played at cards and

made bad puns may possibly be worth recording, but what man on earth cares to know the exact cards he held, or the exact bad puns he made? No one would wish to detract from the merits of Mr. Forster's book, but it is assuredly doing him no injustice to say that, had he paid more attention to the art of suppression and selection, it would have been better for his readers, and better for Swift's fame. But this is not the only blemish in his work. It is animated throughout by an unpleasantly polemical spirit. He appears to have regarded the biographers who preceded him as jealous lovers regard rivals. He is continually going out of his way to exalt himself and to depreciate them. Here we have a digression on the incompetence of Deane Swift, there a sneer at Orrery. Now he pauses to carp at Delany; at another time he wearies us with an account of the deficiencies of Sheridan. He must himself have admitted that his own original contributions to Swift's biography were as a drop in the river, compared with those of Scott and Monck Mason, and yet Scott rarely appears in his pages, except in a disadvantageous light, and to Monck Mason's work, though he draws largely on it, he studiously refrains from acknowledging the slightest obligation. But, to do him justice, Mr. Forster's fragment is a solid and valuable addition to the literature of Swift. If he has added nothing of importance to what was known before, he has scrutinised with microscopic minuteness all that was known; he has thus accurately distinguished between what was fiction and what was fact. He has confirmed and illustrated what was established; he has for ever set at rest what was doubtful; and he has rendered

it impossible for even the suspicion of error to attach itself to any portion of Swift's early history.

Lastly comes Mr. Henry Craik. His work is in many respects greatly superior to any preceding biography. It is more accurate, more critical, and much fuller, than the Memoir by Scott. It is written with more spirit, and it is executed with greater skill, than the Memoir by Monck Mason. It is, besides, enriched with material to which neither Scott nor Monck Mason had access, and which is altogether new. Such, for example, would be the diary kept at Holyhead by Swift, printed by Mr. Craik in his Appendix; such would be the correspondence between Swift and Archdeacon Walls, furnished by Mr. Murray; and such would be the Orrery Papers, furnished by the Earl of Cork.

But it is time to turn from the biographers to the Dean himself.

CHAPTER II

INJUSTICE OF THE POPULAR ESTIMATE OF SWIFT

THE injustice of the popular estimate of Swift is so glaring that it is surely high time for truth to be heard. That estimate, simply stated, resolves itself into this: that he was a gloomy and ferocious misanthrope, with a heart of stone and a tongue of poison; that, if not exactly a libertine, he revelled in impurity and filth; that he was an apostate in politics, a sceptic in religion, and a tyrant in private life; that he wrought the ruin of two women who passionately loved him, and that he paid the penalty for his inhumanity and selfishness by an old age of unutterable misery. Now the facts of Swift's life are, as has been already stated, matters of certain knowledge. In estimating his character a critic has at no point to resort to conjecture; his appeal lies to authentic evidence. That evidence, which is voluminous, few have leisure to survey; but a patient scrutiny of that evidence can scarcely fail to satisfy anyone that the popular picture of Swift has not even the merit of being a caricature, but that it is in truth a mere reckless daub, produced pretty much in the same way as Protogenes is said to have produced the foam on the mouth of his wearied hound.

In the first place, nothing is more certain than that Swift's life, from the time he appears on the stage of history to the time he ceased to be a responsible being, was a long course of active benevolence. While still a struggling priest, more than one-tenth of what he expended he expended in charity. As his fortune increased, his generosity increased with it. As soon as his political services gave him influence, his first thought was for his friends. 'When I had credit for some years at Court,' he writes to Lady Betty Germaine, 'I provided for above fifty people in both kingdoms, of which not one was a relative.' To his recommendation Congreve, Gay, Rowe, Friend, Ambrose Philips, and Steele owed remunerative offices. 'You never come to us,' said Bolingbroke on one occasion, half angrily, 'without bringing some Whig in your sleeve.' He obtained for King, who had libelled and insulted him, a post which relieved that facetious writer from the pressure of want. His kindness to young Harrison and poor Diaper would alone suffice to prove the goodness of his heart. He made the fortune of Barber. He went out of his way to serve Parnell and Berkeley. It was through his influence that Trapp became Bolingbroke's chaplain. How greatly Pope profited from his zealous friendship Pope has himself acknowledged. He was never known to turn a deaf ear to sorrow or poverty; nay, it is notorious that he denied himself the common comforts of life that he might relieve the necessities of the paupers of Dublin. His correspondence teems with proofs of his kindness and charity. At one time we find him pleading for an old soldier, at another time, when almost too ill to

hold the pen, for a poor parson; now again for an unfortunate youth who had been treated harshly by his parents;¹ here he is soliciting subscriptions for a volume of poems, there he is stating the case of a persecuted patriot. 'He loved merit,' says Delany, 'wherever he found it.' His large-hearted philanthropy extended itself in all directions. He was the first who drew attention to the inadequacy of religious instruction in London, and suggested the remedy. He organised a club for the relief of distressed men of letters, and, visiting them personally in their cocklofts and cellars, dispensed with his own hand the money which his generous importunity had wrung from opulent friends. With the first five hundred pounds which he had been able to put by he established a fund which, advancing money without interest, saved many humble families from distress and ruin. He founded a charity school for boys, and at a time when he could ill afford it he built, at his own expense, an almshouse for aged women. Of that noble hospital which owes its existence to his munificent philanthropy we need scarcely speak. But, had he been in private life all that his enemies would represent him, his public services to Ireland would alone suffice to make him the peer of Burke and Howard. With regard to the charge of unbelief, which involves also the more serious charge of hypocrisy, there is not—and it may be said, positively—a tittle of evidence to support it. His real attitude towards religion he has himself, with characteristic candour, accurately defined. In one of his private memoranda—the *Thoughts on Religion*—he writes—

¹ See the admirable letter addressed to William Fitzherbert, the father of the youth (Scott, xviii. 327).

I look upon myself, in the capacity of a clergyman, to be one appointed by Providence for defending a post assigned me, and for gaining over as many enemies as I can. I am not answerable to God for the doubts that arise in my own breast, since they are the consequence of that reason which He has planted in me, if I take care to conceal those doubts from others, if I use my best endeavours to subdue them, and if they have no influence on the conduct of my life.¹

Again he writes—

To remove opinions fundamental in religion is impossible, and the attempt wicked, whether these opinions be true or false, unless your avowed design be to abolish that religion altogether. . . The proceedings of the Socinians are both vain and unwarrantable, because they will never be able to advance their own opinions or meet any other success than breeding doubts and disturbances in the world.²

And what sentence ever came from his pen, or what word is authentically recorded as ever having fallen from his lips, inconsistent with this statement? More than one-third of his voluminous writings, including the work on which the charge of infidelity is based, were in defence of the Protestant Church—the Church in which he believed Christianity to exist in

¹ Scott, viii. 175.

² *Id.* p. 174. See too particularly the sermon on the Trinity, Scott, viii. 28 *seq.*; the sermon on the Wisdom of the World, in which he points out the superiority of Christianity to the systems of pagan philosophy, *id.* p. 147; and the admirable letter to a young clergyman (the paragraph beginning, 'I do not find that you are anywhere directed in the canons or articles to attempt explaining the mysteries of the Christian religion'), *id.* p. 355. Swift's attitude is precisely that of Dryden in the *Religio Laici*, and we may perhaps suspect a resemblance to that of Cotta in Cicero's *De Naturâ Deorum*. There is certainly a very marked absence of unction in all Swift's writings and recorded allusions to religion.

its purest form. It is certain that he devoted a portion of each day to religious exercises. It is certain that no scandalous or immoral action was, during his lifetime, ever seriously imputed to him. The ridiculous fable circulated by a poor lunatic at Kilroot was probably invented long after Swift's death.¹ It is very little to the credit of Nichols that he should have attempted to revive it, or to the credit of Monck-Berkeley that he should have thought it worth serious repetition. Into the question of his apostasy from the Whigs, and into the history of his relations with Esther Johnson and Hester Vanhomrigh, it will be more convenient to enter later on.

That the world, however, should misjudge Swift is not surprising, for he has had the misfortune to number among his assailants four writers who have done more than any other writers who could be named to mould public opinion on matters relating to the literary and political history of the last century. I allude, of course, to Jeffrey, Macaulay, Lord Stanhope, and Thackeray. Jeffrey's article on Swift, or, to speak more accurately, Jeffrey's libel on Swift, appeared in the *Edinburgh Review* for September 1816. It is a work which makes no pretension to impartiality. It is a mere party pamphlet. Its undisguised object was to render the great Tory satirist odious and contemptible. And the method employed is simple. The reviewer begins by attributing everything that Swift did to the lowest motives; he suppresses all mention of such actions in his life as were

¹ The curious volume published in 1730, entitled *Some Memoirs of the Amours and Intrigues of a Certain Irish Dean*, is, of course, an impudent fiction.

indisputably laudable; he puts the worst possible construction on such actions as admitted of misrepresentation; and he paints him as being during the whole course of his existence what he was only in his last sad years. Macaulay followed, and, to transcribe Macaulay's own words, 'the apostate politician, the ribald priest, the perjured lover, the heart burning with hatred against the whole human race,'¹ was again held up to the scorn and loathing of the world. Then came Lord Stanhope. We have no doubt whatever that that amiable and candid historian weighed well the bitter words in which he expressed his opinion of Swift's character,² but we believe him to have followed too implicitly what he found in Jeffrey and Macaulay, to have been insufficiently informed, and to have been too ready to think the worst of the adversary of Cowper and Somers. Of Thackeray's well-known lecture it need only be remarked that it abounds, as Mr. Hannay pointed out long ago, in erroneous statements and in utterly unwarrantable conclusions. It is shallow, it is flashy, it is unjust. The ignorance which Thackeray displays not merely of Swift's writings but of his temper and personal peculiarities is really extraordinary—and the more extraordinary when contrasted with the minute and extensive knowledge which he undoubtedly had of the social life and popular literature of the eighteenth century. Had he known Swift as well as he knew Addison and Fielding, he could scarcely have failed to do justice to virtues which no Englishman has possessed in larger measure than himself.

¹ Review of Mahon's *War of the Succession in Spain*.

² *History of England*, i. 48.

CHAPTER III

THE EARLY LIFE OF SWIFT

THE country in which Swift first saw the light, and with whose history his name will be for ever associated, cannot number him among her sons. Of unmingled English blood, he was descended on his father's side from an old and gentle family. The elder branch of that family had for many years been in possession of important estates in Yorkshire and Nottinghamshire, had intermarried with the Mulgraves and the Creightons, and had, in the person of Barnam Swift, been ennobled by Charles I. The younger branch had settled in the Midland Counties, and from this branch sprang Swift's immediate ancestors. His great-grandfather, William Swift, was a divine of some distinction. He married a woman of large property, but of an irritable and malignant temper. The issue of this marriage were two daughters and a son, Thomas. The misfortunes of Thomas—and his long life was destined to consist of little else than misfortunes—originated in his mother's capricious cruelty. She began by disinheriting him, while still a schoolboy, for robbing an orchard, and a few years later insulted him so grossly that he was unable to remain under the same roof with her. At last, having taken orders, he

obtained from his friend the Bishop of Hereford the vicarage of Goodrich, in Herefordshire. During the Civil troubles he distinguished himself by his chivalrous devotion to the Royal cause. Indeed, his loyalty cost him his fortune and his liberty; for, after being repeatedly plundered by the Roundheads, who on one occasion sacked his parsonage and half murdered his family and servants, he was in 1646 deprived of his preferment, stripped of his patrimony, and flung into prison. Some years before these events had occurred he had formed an alliance which unites by the tie of kindred the two most distinguished names in political satire. The wife of Thomas Swift was Elizabeth Dryden, the sister, not of the poet's father, as the earlier biographers supposed, but of the poet's grandfather. She bore her husband ten sons and four daughters. Of these sons two only were, it seems, regularly educated and provided for. The eldest, Godwin, a clever and pushing youth, settled in Dublin, practised at the Irish bar, married a connection of the Marchioness of Ormond, and prospered. Thither at various times four of his brothers, attracted doubtless by his success, followed him, and Godwin, to do him justice, appears to have exerted all his influence to aid them. One of these brothers must, however, have sorely tried the patience of the kind-hearted but worldly-minded lawyer. This was Jonathan. Without any regular profession, without prospects, and with nothing but a miserable pittance of about twenty pounds a year to depend upon, this thoughtless stripling had taken to wife a young woman as poor as himself. Jonathan's bride was Abigail Erick. She came of an ancient but decayed family in Leicestershire, which claimed as its

founder that wild Saxon patriot whose ferocity and courage were long the terror of our Norman rulers ; for in the veins of Swift's mother ran the blood of Eadric the Forester. The imprudent couple soon experienced the folly of the step they had taken. Mrs. Swift had already a baby in her arms. Poverty and the sordid miseries which follow in its train were before them. At last their prospects seemed to brighten. The stewardship of the King's Inns fell vacant, and Jonathan, who had occasionally assisted in the office, was fortunate enough to obtain the post. This was in January 1666. In the spring of the following year he was in his grave.

He left his wife in deplorable circumstances. As steward he had out of his scanty income been compelled to advance money for commons, but the members of the Inns now refused to refund it. He had died in debt to the Benchers, and his widow was unable to meet the claim. She owed money to the doctors who had attended him ; she owed money to the very undertaker who had buried him. He had been taken from her before she was aware that she was again to become a mother. Every week her distress and embarrassment increased. Her health was wretched, her heart was breaking. In the midst of these miseries her hour of agony drew on. On November 30, 1667, at No. 7, Hoey's Court, Dublin; was born the child who was to make the name of his dead father immortal.

Swift was always slow to confess obligations, but there seems no reason for doubting that both Godwin and William behaved kindly to their sister-in-law. Indeed, it is stated on very good authority that it was

at his Uncle Godwin's house that Jonathan's birth took place, and that the first months of his infancy were passed there. However that may be, an event occurred while he was still a baby which for some years cast doubt on the country of his nativity. It chanced that the nurse, a woman from Whitehaven, to whose care he had been confided, was summoned home to attend a dying relative from whom she expected a legacy. But the good soul had become so attached to her charge that she could not bear to part with it. Without saying a word, therefore, to Mrs. Swift, she stole off with the baby to England, and there for nearly three years the little fellow remained with his tender-hearted foster-mother. He was sickly and delicate, but she watched over him with maternal fondness; and she took such pains with his education that by the time he was three years old he could read any chapter in the Bible. Under what circumstances he rejoined his mother in Ireland we have no means of knowing, but in his seventh year he was placed in the Foundation School of the Ormonds at Kilkenny. One of his playmates in this obscure Irish seminary was in a few years destined to enter on a career of unusual brilliance, and to leave a name as imperishable as his own; for his playmate at Kilkenny was the future author of the *Way of the World* and *Love for Love*. A few unimportant particulars are all that have survived of this period of Swift's life. It seems, however, pretty certain that there was nothing to distinguish him either at school or at college from the general body of his class-fellows. Parts like his are, indeed, rarely remarkable for their precocious development. In his

fifteenth year he commenced residence at Trinity College, Dublin, being supported, no doubt, by his uncles Godwin and William. He was entered as a pensioner on April 24, 1682, and here he remained during those years which are perhaps of all years the most critical in man's life.

His career at Trinity was not creditable to him. Between the period of his matriculation and that of his degree, though he lived, he tells us, with great regularity and due observance of the statutes, he turned a deaf ear to his teachers, neglected the studies prescribed by the College, and, reading just as whim or accident directed, found himself, on the eve of his examination, very ill-qualified to face it. The subjects then required for a degree in Arts were, it must be admitted, sufficiently repulsive. Those noble works which form in our day the basis of a liberal education had had no place in the curriculum. The poetry, the oratory, the history of the ancient world, were alike ignored. Plato was a dead letter; Aristotle held the post of honour, but it was not the Aristotle who is familiar to us—the Aristotle of the *Ethics*, of the *Politics*, of the *Poetics*, of the *Rhetoric*—but the Aristotle of the *Organon*, the *Physics*, and the *Metaphysics*. Next in estimation to these treatises stood the dreary *Isagoge* of Porphyry, and the writings of two pedantic logicians whose names have long since sunk into oblivion, Smiglecius and Burgersdicius. Swift presented himself for examination, and failed. The examining Board, pronouncing him to be dull and insufficient, refused at first to pass him. Finally, however, they granted a degree *speciali gratiâ*, a term implying in that University that a candidate has

gained by favour what he is not entitled to claim by merit. With this slur upon his name he resumed his studies, his object being to proceed to the higher degree of Master. His former irregularities were now aggravated by graver misdemeanours. He absented himself from chapel and from roll-call, neglected lectures, was out late at night, and became associated with a clique of youths who were not merely idle but dissolute. Indeed, he seems to have been in ill odour everywhere. Mr. Forster manfully endeavours to prove that Swift's college life has been greatly misrepresented. He is willing to admit that it was not all a fond biographer could wish, but he is, he says, convinced that it was by no means so discreditable as it has been painted. He produces, for example, a College roll, dated Easter, 1685, in which Swift is entered as having at a recent examination acquitted himself satisfactorily in Latin and Greek. From this Mr. Forster infers that neither incompetence nor idleness could be justly imputed to him. He is well aware that in later years Swift never questioned, or, to speak more accurately, that he tacitly corroborated, the unfavourable verdict passed on him by the examiners at Trinity. But this Mr. Forster interprets as a touch of sarcastic irony. 'Famous as Swift then was,' he says, 'any discredit from the special grace would, as he well knew, go to the givers. In attempting to fix a stigma upon him, they only succeeded in fixing a stigma upon themselves.' Mr. Forster next points out that the most serious of Swift's alleged delinquencies during these years are purely supposititious—that he has been confounded with his cousin Thomas—and that it is to Thomas,

not to Jonathan, that the entries in the College registry may in many cases refer. This is undoubtedly true. Thus we have no means of determining whether the Swift who, in November, 1688, was suspended for insubordination and contumacy was Thomas or Jonathan, though the biographers have in all cases assumed that the culprit was Jonathan. That Jonathan was, however, publicly censured in March, 1687, is certain, as in the entry which records the censure—censure for ‘notorious neglect of duties’ and for ‘tavern-haunting’—the names of the two Swifts occur together.¹ Whether he had any share in the composition of a scurrilous harangue,² in which some of the principal members of the Trinity Common Room are treated with gross disrespect, and for the delivery of which, in the character of Terræ Filius, one of his college acquaintances narrowly escaped expulsion, is still open to debate. Dr. Barrett is convinced that it was Swift’s production. Mr. Forster sees no traces of his hand in any portion of it. Scott is of opinion that it received touches from him, and in that opinion I entirely concur. The heroic poem, for example, in the third act of the piece is very much in the vein of his maturer years; the doggerel Latin recalls exactly the jargon in which throughout his life he delighted to indulge; and, though we search in vain for his peculiar humour, we find, we regret to say, only too much of his peculiar indecency. But the subject is scarcely worth discussing.

Whatever may have been the measure of his delinquencies at College, it is not difficult to account

¹ See the subject fully discussed in Barrett’s *Essay*, pp 10-19.

² Printed by Barrett *id.* pp. 46-77.

for their origin. His life had been poisoned at its very source. Everything within and everything without combined to irritate and depress him. He was miserably poor, he was inordinately proud; he was daily exposed to contumely and contempt, he was sensitive even to disease. The wretched pittance which was his sole support, and for which he was indebted to the charity of relatives, was bestowed in a manner which stung him to the quick. Of these cruel benefactors his uncle Godwin was probably the chief, and the patronage of Godwin he repaid with an energy of hatred which no lapse of years could impair. Ill-health and hypochondria added to his sufferings. The solace of human sympathy was during the whole of this dismal period unknown to him. His mother, who was in England, he never saw. There is no evidence of his having been on affectionate terms with any of his associates. He sought at first some alleviation for his miseries in the perusal of light literature, and he gave to poetry and history the time which should have been devoted to severer studies. The result of this was that, at an age when youths are peculiarly sensitive about anything which casts aspersion on their parts, he found himself branded as a blockhead. What followed was natural. Angry with himself, with his relatives, with his teachers, he became reckless and dissolute. His misfortunes were brought to a climax by the failure of his uncle Godwin, who had for some time been in embarrassed circumstances, and was now on the verge of ruin.

Meanwhile events were occurring which terminated in his abrupt departure for the mother-country. Ireland was in the throes of a dreadful crisis

Tyrconnel, at the head of the Celtic Catholics, was hurrying on a revolution which threatened to end in the extermination of the Saxon Protestants. The English, who held their lives in their hands, were preparing to abandon their possessions and fly. At the close of 1688 a report was circulated that there was to be a general massacre of the Saxons. A panic ensued. The ports were crowded. Many who were unable to obtain a place in commodious vessels embarked in open boats. Among these terrified emigrants was young Swift. On arriving in England he at once made his way to his mother, who was residing near her relatives at Leicester. She was not, as he well knew, in a position to offer him a home, but he found what he sought, affection and guidance. The glimpses which tradition gives us of this excellent woman suffice to show that the respect and love with which her illustrious son never ceased to regard her were not undeserved.¹ An unassuming piety pervaded her whole life. Though her fortune was scanty, even to meanness, she was, she used to say, rich and happy. Her spirit was independent, her mind cultivated, her manners gentle and refined. Her polite and sprightly conversation was the delight of all who knew her, and she was endowed with what is perhaps the rarest of all the qualities possessed by her sex—a keen sense of humour. From her Jonathan inherited no doubt many of the gifts which were to make him famous; it was unfortunately not given her to transmit to him the gifts which would have made him happy. He remained at Leicester for some months, dividing his

¹ For the character of Mrs. Swift see Deane Swift's *Essay*, pp. 22-3.

time between forming plans for the future and toying with rustic beauties. His attentions to one of these young women, an intelligent but portionless girl, became so marked that Mrs. Swift, remembering the miseries of her own ill-advised union, was greatly alarmed. She found, however, some consolation in the fact that her scapegrace was amenable to reason.

The necessity for his quitting Leicester, where, if not dependent on herself, he was dependent on her relatives, and where he had no chance of obtaining employment, was obvious. But where that employment was likely to present itself was a problem on which the good lady was not able to throw much light. In truth, the future of a young man whose sole distinctions were a character for idleness and insubordination, a gloomy temper, an uncouth exterior, and the possession of a degree obtained under circumstances notoriously discreditable to him, might well have puzzled a far more experienced adviser. In this perplexity it occurred to her that the best course for Jonathan to take would be to consult Sir William Temple. That eminent man, though moving in a sphere very different from her own, had married one of her connections. His father, Sir Richard, had, moreover, been on terms of intimacy with Godwin Swift, and she thought it not unlikely, therefore, that Temple would, out of consideration for his father's friend, do what he could to assist that friend's nephew. Nor was she mistaken. Temple not merely received him with kindness but offered him a home, and at the beginning of the summer of 1689 we find him domesticated at Moor Park. The nature of Swift's connection with Temple and the circumstances of his residence at Moor

Park have been very variously related. Macaulay describes it as a period of unmingled humiliation and wretchedness, and represents his position as little better than that of an upper servant. Mr. Forster draws a different conclusion. There is, he contends, no evidence to show that Temple treated his young dependent in any manner calculated to wound his pride; and he is, he says, convinced that, whatever may have been the exact position held by Swift in Temple's household, it involved nothing which compromised either self-respect or independence. Swift's own account of the matter certainly corroborates Mr. Forster's view. 'I hope,' he wrote many years afterwards, in a letter to Lord Palmerston, 'you will not charge my living in Sir William's family as an obligation; for I was educated to little purpose if I retired to his house on any other motive than the benefit of his conversation and advice, and the opportunity of pursuing my studies.' Nothing, too, is more certain than that Temple introduced him to his most distinguished guests, an honour to which he would scarcely have been admitted, had he sat, as Macaulay represents, at the second table. Twice, indeed, during this period of alleged ignominious vassalage, we find him in conversation with no less a person than his Sovereign, who on one occasion condescended to teach him how to cut asparagus in the Dutch way, and on another listened to his arguments in favour of the Triennial Bill.

The conclusions of Macaulay and the conclusions of Mr. Forster may, however, without much difficulty be reconciled. Macaulay was no doubt right in asserting that the years passed by Swift under Temple's roof

were years during which his haughty and restless spirit suffered cruel mortification. Mr. Forster is no doubt right in denying that Temple regarded him as a mere parasite. The truth probably is that he entered Moor Park as Temple's amanuensis and secretary; that in return for these services he was boarded and paid; that his patron at first treated him not indeed with indignity, but with the reserve and indifference which a man of the world would naturally maintain towards a raw and inexperienced youth of twenty-three. But as his genius developed, and as his extraordinary powers began to display themselves—neither of which would be likely to escape so acute an observer as Temple—his relations with his employer assumed a new character. Temple grew every day more condescending and gracious. He discoursed freely with him on public affairs; he gave him the benefit of his own great experience as a diplomatist and as a courtier; and he entrusted him with business with which he would assuredly have entrusted nobody in whose tact and parts he had not full confidence. It was not in Temple's nature to feel or assume that frank cordiality which puts dependents at their ease and lightens the burden of obligation, for his constitution was cold, his humour reserved. Partly also owing to ill-health, and partly to congenital infirmity, his temper was often moody and capricious. Of his substantial kindness to Swift there can, however, be no question. Indeed, it seems clear that Temple behaved from first to last with a generosity which has never been sufficiently appreciated. When, for example, in the spring of 1690, the state of the young secretary's health rendered a change to Ireland necessary, Temple at once exercised his in-

fluence to procure employment for him in Dublin. Two years afterwards he helped him to obtain an *ad eundem* degree in Arts at Oxford, and in 1694 he offered him a post—the only post it was in his power to bestow—in Ireland. He had already recommended him to the notice of the King, who had, as early as 1692, promised to assist him.

↳ But, unhappily, the mind and body of the youth on whom these favours had been bestowed were so diseased that what was intended to benefit served only to irritate and distress him; the more indulgence he received the more exacting and querulous he became; the brighter appeared the prospect without, the deeper and blacker grew the gloom within. All that had haunted his solitude at Dublin with unrest and wretchedness now returned to torment him in scenes of less sordid misery. His pride amounted almost to monomania. Fancied slights and imaginary wrongs ulcerated his soul with rage and grief. No kindness availed either to soothe or to cheer him. What would in gentler spirits have awaked the sense of gratitude, awoke nothing in him but a galling sense of obligation. In an honourable employment his jaundiced vision discerned only derogatory servitude. The acute sensibility which had been his bane from childhood kept him constantly on the rack. A hasty word or even a cold look sufficed to trouble him during many days, and the inequalities of his patron's temper caused him pain so exquisite that it vibrated in his memory for years.¹ Nor were these his only miseries. The first symptoms, or what he

¹ For a vivid description of his miseries at Moor Park see his *Verses on Temple's Late Illness and Recovery*, Scott, xiv. 45.

believed to be the first symptoms, of that mysterious malady which pursued him through life, and which was, after making existence a misery to him, to end in bringing him, under circumstances of unspeakable degradation, to the tomb, had already revealed themselves. His chief solace during the earlier portion of this dismal time lay in scribbling verses and in teaching a little delicate, pale-faced, dark-eyed girl to read and write. The child was a daughter of a poor widow in the service of Temple's sister, Lady Giffard, and when Swift first saw her she was in her seventh year. Such were the circumstances under which he first met Esther Johnson, and such was the commencement of what was to afford him the only true happiness, perhaps, he was ever to know.

To poetic composition he appears at this time to have devoted himself with great diligence; but his success was by no means proportioned to his efforts. In truth, anything worse than the Pindarics of Swift would be inconceivable. They are not merely immeasurably below the vilest of Cowley's or Oldham's, but they are immeasurably below the vilest that could be selected from Yalden, Flatman, or Sprat. Indeed, they are so bad that, if we wish to judge of them relatively, we must judge them in relation to each other. If, for example, there is anything more insufferable than the *Ode to Archbishop Sancroft*, it is the *Ode to Sir William Temple*; and should the reader be inclined to wonder whether anything worse than the *Ode to Sir William Temple* could possibly exist, he has only to turn to the *Ode on the Athenian Society*. This last poem he submitted to his kinsman Dryden, requesting an opinion as to its merits. 'Cousin Swift,' was the

old man's blunt reply, 'you will never be a poet.' As Dryden's literary judgments were held to be without appeal, and carried among the wits of these times the weight and authority of oracles, this was a severe blow. And Swift felt it keenly. Its effect on him was characteristic. He recognised, with the good sense that always distinguished him, the justice of the criticism, and he wrote no more ambitious verses. But he indemnified himself for the blow his vanity had received by seizing every opportunity to ridicule and vilify his critic. To the end of his life he pursued the memory of Dryden with unrelenting hostility.

He now determined to strike for independence. His thoughts pointed towards the Church, for in the Church he saw prospects such as no other walk in life opened out, and the King had promised him preferment in the event of his taking orders. But Temple was very unwilling to part with him. He counselled delay; it would be wiser, he thought, to wait until the King had offered what he promised. Swift was, however, not to be evaded, and his importunity appears to have ruffled his patron's temper. At last, after some haggling, he boldly demanded what Temple was prepared to do for him. 'I shall not,' said the old statesman, 'pledge myself to anything; but you may, if you please, take a clerkship in the Irish Rolls.' 'Then,' replied Swift, 'as I have now an opportunity of living without being driven into the Church for a maintenance, I shall go to Ireland and take orders.' And he quitted Moor Park in a rage.

He had, however, in all probability, fully considered what he was about to do; and, though after events must have caused misgivings as to the prudence of

this course, it is remarkable that he never, so far as can be discovered, expressed, either in writing or in conversation, regret for having taken a step which, from a worldly point of view, he had assuredly ample reason to repent. He was ordained by the Bishop of Derry; his deacon's orders are dated Oct. 28, 1694, his priest's orders Jan. 13, 1695. In his autobiography he is careful to tell us that it was not for the mere sake of gaining a livelihood that he sought ordination, but his correspondence makes it quite clear that the expectation of preferment was, if not his only, at least his primary motive. However that may be, he accepted his position with all its responsibilities. If the yoke galled him, none saw the sore. If he had scruples, he concealed them. †It would be absurd to say that Swift was at any time a model clergyman, but it is due to him to acknowledge that, from the moment he entered the Church to the moment disease incapacitated him for action, he was the indefatigable champion of his order. Few ecclesiastics have, indeed, in any age, done more for the body to which they belonged. To his efforts the Irish Church owed the remission of First Fruits and Twentieths. It was he who suggested, and it was he who pleaded for, the erection of those churches which still keep the memory of Queen Anne fresh among Londoners. For upwards of thirty years he fought the battles of the Church against the Catholics on the one hand, against the Nonconformists and Freethinkers on the other, with a vehemence and intrepidity which savoured not merely of zeal but of fanaticism. † The meanest of his brethren, when persecuted and oppressed, was sure of his protection. Any

attempt on the part of the laity to tamper with the rights of the clergy never failed to bring him into the field. It was this which envenomed him against the Whigs. It was this which involved him in a lifelong feud with the Dissenters. It was this which inspired the last and most terrible of his satires. Nor did his anxiety for the interests of his order end here. There can indeed be no question that the respectability of the inferior clergy dates from him. What the position of an unbeneficed priest was in those days we know from innumerable sources. His existence was, as a rule, one long struggle with sordid embarrassments. Though he belonged to a learned profession, he was not permitted even by courtesy to place himself on an equality with gentlemen. He subsisted partly on charity, and partly on such fees as his professional services might accidentally enable him to pick up. He officiated at clandestine marriages, he baptized unfortunate children. He negotiated here for a burial, and there for a sermon. In one family he undertook to say grace for his keep; in another he contracted to read prayers twice a day for ten shillings a month. The result of this was that the minor clergy, as Macaulay justly remarks, ranked as a body lower than any other educated class in the community.¹ To Swift belongs the double honour of having been the first to kindle in his degraded brethren a new spirit, and of having done more than any other single man ever did to vindicate for them that rank in society which happily they now hold. He strove to impress

¹ That Macaulay's well-known picture of the state of the clergy at this time is substantially correct is shown by Mr. Lecky, *England in the Eighteenth Century*, pp. 75-78.

on them a sense of the dignity of their calling. He pointed out to them that to obtain the respect of the world they must respect themselves. He taught them to feel that a Christian and a scholar was in the truest signification of the word a gentleman; that there need be nothing servile in dependence, nothing derogatory in poverty. How minutely he had studied the requirements of his profession is evident in his *Essay on the Fates of Clergymen*,¹ in the treatise he began *Concerning that Universal Hatred which prevails against the Clergy*,² and in his *Letter to a Young Clergyman on taking Orders*³—an admirable treatise which well deserves a place in the library of every candidate for ordination. Few things, probably, gave him more pleasure than the reflection that his own social distinction had in a manner contributed to raise the clergy in popular estimation. What is certain is that, the more famous he became, the more studiously he identified himself with his order. At Court, at the levee of the Lord Treasurer, in the drawing-rooms of noble houses, he carried this peculiarity to the verge of ostentation. It was observed that whenever he went abroad, or gave audience to a stranger, he was careful to appear in cassock and gown. He would never permit even his most intimate friends to forget the respect due to his cloth. If at social gatherings festivity exceeded the limits of the becoming, it was his habit to leave the table. Immodesty and impiety he regarded with abhorrence, and he was once so annoyed at the levity of the conversation at Bolingbroke's table that he quitted his

¹ Scott, viii. 361.

² *Id.* p. 373. See too his tracts on the Irish Clergy

³ *Id.* p. 335.

host's house in a rage. In his anonymous writings he allowed himself, it is true, a licence which seems scarcely compatible with this austerity; but his anonymous writings must not be confounded with his personal character. No profane or licentious expression was ever known to proceed from his lips. 'His ideas and his style,' says Delany, 'throughout the whole course of his conversation were remarkably delicate and pure beyond those of most men I was ever acquainted with.'¹ His morals were pure even to asceticism. His deportment was remarkably grave and dignified, and his conduct, though often singularly eccentric, was never such as to degrade him in the eyes of inferiors. The least charitable of his biographers admit that he performed his duties, both as a parish priest and as head of the Chapter of St. Patrick's, with exemplary diligence. He regularly visited the sick, he regularly administered the Sacrament, he regularly preached. For twenty years he was never known to absent himself from early morning prayer. Though he had personally no taste for music, he took immense pains with the education of the choir at St. Patrick's. At Laracor he instituted, in addition to the ordinary Sunday services, extraordinary services on week-days; and these services, whenever he was in residence, he conducted himself. If between 1701 and 1714 he was frequently absent from his parish, it must be remembered that his congregation scarcely ever numbered more than twenty, and that for this congregation, scanty though

¹ Delany's *Observations*, p. 75; and again, p. 83, 'He was remarkably guarded against anything that had the least appearance of indecency.'

it was, he not only provided an incumbent, but took care, even during his busiest time in London, to be regularly informed of all that took place in his absence. He rebuilt at his own expense the parsonage; he laid out at his own expense the grounds; he increased the glebe from one acre to twenty. That there was much in the temper and conduct of this singular man which ill became an apostle of that religion the soul and essence of which are humility and charity, we must in justice acknowledge. But no such admission should induce us to withhold the praise to which he is righteously entitled. And that praise is high praise.

Preferment, such as it was, was not long in coming. A few days after he had been ordained priest he was presented with the small prebend of Kilroot. It was in the diocese of Connor, and was worth about a hundred a year. Of his residence at Kilroot few particulars have survived. One passage of his life in this dismal solitude is, however, not without interest. At Kilroot Swift sought, and sought with importunity, to become a husband. For the last time in his life he addressed a woman in the language of passion. For the last time in his life he was at the feet of a fellow-creature. The lady who had the honour of inspiring this affection was the sister of a college acquaintance. Her name was Waryng, a name which her suitor, after the fashion of gallants of those times, transformed into the fanciful title of Varina. *The correspondence between the two lovers extended over a period of four years. Of this nothing remains but two letters of Swift's, and from these two letters must be gathered all that

can now be known of the woman whom Thackeray absurdly describes as Swift's first victim. Now these letters seem conclusive in Swift's favour. He had, it is easy to see, acted in every way honourably and straightforwardly. He offered to make great sacrifices; he expresses himself in terms of chivalrous devotion. Miss Waryng, on the other hand, appears to have been an inflammable but politic coquette, who held out just so much hope as sufficed to keep her lover in expectancy, and just so much encouragement as sufficed to make him impatient. For a while he submitted to all the indignities which female caprice can devise for the torture of men in his unhappy condition. At last the spell was broken; he grew first languid and then indifferent. What followed was what usually does follow in such cases. As the lover cooled, the mistress melted. As he wished to dissolve the tie, she wished to draw it closer. Their correspondence terminated with a letter on which it is needless to comment, but which it would be well for all who may, like Varina, be tempted to abuse the prerogatives of wit and beauty, to peruse.¹ It would not be true to say that Swift ever became a misogynist, but nothing is more certain than that from this time the poetry of the affections ceased to appeal to him. Henceforth love lost all its glamour; henceforth the passion which religion and romance have ennobled into the purest and holiest of human bonds awoke only nausea and contempt. He never afterwards sought to marry; he never afterwards permitted woman to be more to him than a sister or a friend. †

¹ Printed in Scott, vol. xv. 244.

Meanwhile his patron was anxious to have him back again at Moor Park. Temple was, it seems, busy preparing his *Memoirs* and *Miscellanies* for the press, and wanted assistance. Accordingly, at the beginning of 1696, he wrote to Swift inviting him to return. Swift, weary of Kilroot, and influenced, no doubt, by the hope of preferment in England, complied at once with the request. He completed his arrangements, indeed, with such expedition that gossip was busy with conjectures as to the reason of his sudden departure. Two legends, one to his credit and one to his discredit, but both equally unfounded and equally absurd, have been preserved by biographers. They are, however, scarcely worth a passing allusion.

Swift's second residence at Moor Park may be regarded as the turning-point of his life. During this period his character became fixed; the habits which ever afterwards distinguished him were formed; his real education commenced; his extraordinary powers first revealed themselves. Delany and others tell us that ever since his failure at the University he had vowed to devote at least eight hours in every day to study. Of this industry we find no very decisive proofs, either during his first residence with Temple or during his stay in Ireland. But between 1696 and 1700 it is certain that his application was intense. In one year, for example, in addition to several English and French works, he had perused the whole of Virgil twice, Lucretius and Florus three times, the whole of the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*, the whole of Horace and Petronius, the *Characters* of Theophrastus, the *Epistles* of Cicero, much of Ælian; and

had not only read but analysed Diodorus Siculus, Cyprian, and Irenæus. His classical attainments were never, we suspect, either exact or profound. Of his acquirements in Greek scholarship he has, it is true, given us no opportunity of judging; but of his acquirements in Latin we can only say that, if they are to be estimated by his compositions, they were not such as to give him a place among scholars. His Latin prose is, as a rule, ostentatiously unclassical, and his verses harsh and lumbering. The *Carberiae Rupes* is indeed written with great vigour, and is not inferior in point of Latinity to Johnson's verses on completing his *Lexicon*, but it is not a poem which Addison or Gray would have cared to own. But, whatever may have been his deficiency in the niceties of scholarship, his general acquaintance with the writers of antiquity was undoubtedly considerable. Of his familiarity with Homer there can be no question. He was his favourite poet, and he once said of him that he had more genius than all the rest of the world put together.¹ It would seem, too, that he must have studied Demosthenes with great diligence. It may sound paradoxical, but assuredly there is nothing in our literature more Demosthenean, in diction, colour, and method at least, than the *Drapier Letters* and such pamphlets as the *Conduct of the Allies* and the *Public Spirit of the Whigs*.² Lucretius was always

¹ Deane Swift's *Essay*, p. 237.

² Dr. Jowett, in the Introduction to his translation of Plato's *Republic*, says that there are no traces of a knowledge of Plato in Swift. This is not correct. In the *Sentiments of a Church of England Man* there is an allusion to a passage in the *Apology*; in his 31st *Examiner* the substance of Aristophanes' speech in the *Symposium* is given (the unknown correspondent being a common fiction); there is a

a favourite with him, and the Roman satirists he knew intimately. Indeed, he was so sensible of the value of such studies, that, when political duties had for a while suspended them, his first care, on becoming master of his time, was to betake himself to the History of the Persian Wars and to the *De Rerum Naturâ*.

While he was thus storing his mind with the treasures of Temple's library, an incident occurred which gave birth to the first characteristic production of his genius. For some years a most idle controversy as to the relative merits of ancient and modern writers had been agitating literary circles both in England and on the Continent; and in 1692 Temple had, in an elegantly written but silly and flimsy dissertation, taken up the gauntlet in favour of the ancients. In this dissertation he had selected for special eulogy a series of impudent forgeries which some late sophist had attempted to palm off on the world as the *Epistles of Phalaris of Agrigentum*. Competent scholars had long treated them with the contempt they deserved. But Temple, with a dogmatism which was the more ludicrous as he was probably unable to construe a line of the language in which they were written, not only pronounced them to be genuine, but cited them as proofs of the superiority of the ancients in epistolary literature. Nothing which bore Temple's name on the title-page could fail to command attention, and reference to the *Republic* in the *Advice to a Young Poet*; Plato is quoted in the sermon on the Wisdom of this World; in *Gulliver's Travels*, Part IV., he is quoted on the subject of conjectural knowledge; and the account of the principle on which selections for marriage are made in the Commonwealth of the Houyhnhnms is plainly taken from the fifth book of the *Republic*.

the treatise speedily became popular. The general public, who knew little more about Phalaris than that he roasted people in a brazen bull and was afterwards roasted himself, grew curious about these wonderful letters. As there was no accessible edition, Aldrich, the Dean of Christ Church, induced his favourite pupil, Charles Boyle, a younger son of the Earl of Orrery, to undertake one, and in 1695 the volume appeared. The book was as bad as bad could be, and would have been forgotten in a fortnight, but it chanced that in the preface the young editor had taken occasion to sneer at Richard Bentley, then fast rising to pre-eminence among scholars. Bentley, in revenge, proved the letters to be what in truth they were, the worthless fabrication of a late age. To the public expression of this opinion he had been urged by his friend Wotton, who had already broken a lance with Temple in defence of the moderns, and was only too glad to find so weak a point in his opponent's armour. Temple, naturally angry at the aspersion thus cast on his taste and sagacity, and the dignitaries of Christ Church, feeling that the reputation of their College was at stake, made common cause. Temple prepared a reply, which he had the good sense to suppress. Boyle, or rather Boyle's coadjutors, Atterbury and Smalridge, united to produce a work now only memorable for having elicited Bentley's immortal treatise. Some months, however, before the Christ Church wits were in the field, Swift had come to his patron's assistance. The *Battle of the Books* is surely the most original and pleasing of Swift's minor satires. The humour is in his finest vein, austere and bitter, but without any of that

malignity which in later years so often flavoured it. Every clause is pregnant with sense and meaning. The occasional parodies of the Homeric style are felicitous in the extreme. The allegory throughout is admirably conducted, full of significance even in its minutest details. Nothing could be happier than the Apologue of the Spider and the Bee, nothing more amusing than the portrait of Bentley, and assuredly nothing more exquisitely ludicrous than the episode of Bentley and Wotton. Historically the work is of great interest. It initiated a new style of satire. It opened out a new field for satire. It sounded the first note of the famous war waged by Wit and Humour and Good Sense against Pedantry and the Abuse of Learning—a war in which so many of the foremost men of the eighteenth century were to engage. Out of the *Battle of the Books* grew the dissertations in the *Tale of a Tub*, and out of those dissertations grew the great Scriblerus Satire and the Fourth Book of the *Dunciad*.¹ For the idea, but for the idea only, of this work, Swift was perhaps indebted to De Callières, a French writer, whose *Histoire poétique de la Guerre nouvellement déclarée entre les Anciens et les Modernes* appeared in 1688, and is now one of the rarest volumes known to bibliographers.²

¹ It is perhaps worth noticing that the *Battle of the Books* supplied Matthew Arnold with the phrase which has since become so popular, 'Sweetness and Light'; and Gray with the hint of his sublimest couplet—

'Amazement in his van, with Flight combin'd,
And Sorrow's faded form, and Solitude behind.'

Cf. where Swift says of Bentley, 'On he went, and in his van Confusion and Amaze, while Horror and Affright brought up the rear.'

² The authorship of this work was formerly attributed to an apo-

Swift soon discovered where his strength lay. His genius developed itself with astonishing rapidity. In 1696 he had not, so far as is known, produced a line which indicated the possession of powers in any way superior to those of ordinary men. In the following year he suddenly appeared as the author of a satire of which the least that can be said is that it would have added to the reputation of Lucian or Erasmus; and before the year was out he had written the greater part of a work which is allowed to be one of the first prose satires in the world. The *Tale of a Tub* was composed immediately after the *Battle of the Books*, and it forms, as Mr. Forster rightly observes, part of the same satirical design. In the *Battle of the Books* he had satirised, in the person of the Moderns, the abuses of learning; in the *Tale of a Tub* he satirises in the body of the narrative the abuses of religion, and in the digressions he returns to his former theme. It is scarcely necessary to say that the immediate object of the Apologue of the Three Brothers was to trace the gradual corruption of primitive Christianity, to ridicule the tenets and the economy of the Church of Rome, to pour contempt on the Presbyterians and Nonconformists, and to vindicate the superiority of that section of the Reformed Church to which he himself belonged. But, though the Apologue of the Three Brothers is the most celebrated portion of the satire, and forms, so to speak, the nucleus of the work, it is not here that the key is to be found. If we would seek the key we may find it in the ninth section:—

cryphal Contray. It was reserved for Mr. Craik to assign it to its proper author. See his interesting note, *Life of Swift*, p. 71.

How fading and insipid do all objects accost us that are not conveyed in the vehicle of delusion! How shrunk is everything as it appears in the glass of nature! So that, if it were not for the assistance of artificial mediums, false lights, refracted angles, varnish and tinsel, there would be a mighty level in the felicity and enjoyments of mortal men. . . . In the proportion that credulity is a more peaceful possession of the mind than curiosity, so far preferable is that wisdom which converses about the surface to that pretended philosophy which enters into the depth of things.

He tells us in the Apology that he had endeavoured to strip himself of as many real prejudices as he could—in other words, not to be the dupe of illusions; and in this temper the work is composed. The satire rests on the same foundation as *Gulliver's Travels*—a deep-seated and intense conviction of the hollowness and nothingness of life, a profound contempt for all the objects to which the energies of mankind are usually directed, and a profound contempt for all that is supposed to constitute human eminence. That the satire falls chiefly on 'those strange beasts which in all tongues are called fools' is true, but the mockery, as in *Gulliver*, knows no distinction. The very dedication is ironical, and could scarcely have been agreeable to Somers. Martin is every whit as ridiculous as his brethren, and, whatever Swift may himself have thought or designed—and that he was the last man in the world to be guilty of intentional profanity is certain—the effect of the work is undoubtedly to place all ceremonial religion in a ludicrous light. Against the charge of profanity he anxiously defended himself in an elaborate Apology prefixed to an edition of the work which appeared in 1710. After frankly admitting that he 'had given a liberty to his pen which might not suit with maturer years or

graver characters'—for he was 'a young gentleman' when he wrote the work—he yet maintains that nothing can be fairly deduced from it which is contrary to religion and morality. He is, he says, at a loss to understand why any clergyman of the English Church should be angry to see the follies of fanaticism and superstition exposed, though in the most ridiculous manner. So far from the satire containing anything to provoke them, 'it celebrates the Church of England as the most perfect of all others in discipline and doctrine; it advances no opinion they reject, nor condemns any they receive.' Religion, it is true, ought not to be ridiculed, but surely, he continues, its corruptions are proper subjects for satire. 'Il y a bien de la différence,' he might, indeed, have said with Pascal, 'entre rire de la religion et rire de ceux qui la profanent par leurs opinions extravagantes. Ce serait une impiété de manquer de respect pour les vérités que l'esprit de Dieu a révélées; mais ce serait une autre impiété de manquer de mépris pour les faussetés que l'esprit de l'homme leur oppose.'¹ But, though he argued thus, and contended that what was reprehensible in the work could have been easily corrected with a very few blots, those very few blots were never made. He was, no doubt, perfectly aware that the removal of what pious people might with justice take exception to as profane would be as disastrous to the fabric of his work as his own Jack's removal of the gold lace and embroidery from the primitive coat. He adopted, therefore, in the interests of his work, the policy of Martin, but in his own professional interests he compromised the matter by

¹ *Lettres Provinciales*, xi.

never acknowledging the authorship of the satire. To this day the authorship of the *Tale of a Tub* rests only on presumptive evidence.

No other of his satires is so essentially Rabelaisian, but it is Rabelaisian in the best sense of the word. In the phrase of Voltaire, it is Rabelais in his senses; in the still happier phrase of Coleridge, it is the soul of Rabelais in a dry place. Without the good canon's buffoonery and mysticism, it has all his inexhaustible fertility of imagination and fancy, all his humour, all his wit. But it has them with a difference. The humour of Rabelais is that of a man drunk with animal spirits; the humour of Swift is that of a reflective cynic. The essence of Rabelais's wit is grotesque extravagance; the wit of Swift is the perfection of refined ingenuity. The one revels without restraint in licentious drollery; the other, sobered and measured, delights most in dry and bitter irony. In the *History of Gargantua and Pantagruel* there is no attempt at condensation; the ideas are, as a rule, pursued with wearisome prolixity to their utmost ramifications. But the power manifested in the *Tale of a Tub* is not merely power expressed, but power latent. Its force is the force of reserve. Every paragraph is pregnant with innuendo; every page teems with suggestion. There is much in Rabelais which conveyed, we suspect, as little meaning to Du Bellay and Marot as it conveys to us. There is nothing in Swift's allegory which would puzzle a schoolboy who has Scott's notes, brief though they are, in his hand. The *Tale of a Tub* is, in the opinion of many of Swift's critics, his masterpiece. 'It exhibits,' says Johnson, 'a vehemence and

rapidity of mind, a copiousness and vivacity of diction, such as he never afterwards possessed, or never exerted.'

It is curious that it should have escaped all Swift's biographers and critics that he was probably indebted for the hint of this famous work to a sermon written by Archbishop Sharp, the very prelate who succeeded a few years later in persuading Anne that, as the author of such a satire as the *Tale*, Swift was not a proper person for a bishopric. Sharp's sermon is entitled, *A Discussion of the Question which the Roman Catholics much insist upon with the Protestants, viz. in which of the different Communions in Christendom the only true Church of Christ is to be found. With a refutation of a certain Popish argument handed about in manuscript in 1686.* Now, as this sermon had attracted great attention, because it had given occasion to James II.'s mandatory letter to the Bishop of London to suspend Sharp, then Rector of St. Giles' in the Fields, it is very likely indeed to have come under Swift's notice.¹

¹ Sharp's allegory is this (he is disputing the claims of the Church of Rome to consider itself the primitive and Catholic Church):—'A father bequeaths a large estate among his children and their children after them. They do for some generations quietly and peaceably enjoy their several shares without disturbance from each other. At last one branch of this family (and not of the eldest house neither) starts up, and, being of greater power than the rest, and having got some of the same family to join with him, very impudently challengeth the whole estate to himself . . . and would dispossess all the rest of the descendants, accounting them no better than bastards, though they be far more in number than his own party. . . . Upon this they contest their own right against him, alleging their father's will and testament and their long possession, and that they are lawfully descended from their first common ancestor. But this gentleman who would lord it over his brethren offers this irrefragable argument for the justice of his claim.' The argument is that they cannot show

Swift's indifference to literary distinction, at an age when men are as a rule most eager for such distinction, is curiously illustrated by the fate of these works. For eight years they remained in manuscript, and, when they appeared, they appeared not only anonymously, but without receiving his final corrections.

At the beginning of 1699 Temple died. 'He expired,' writes Swift with mingled tenderness and cynicism, 'at one o'clock this morning, January 27, 1699, and with him all that was good and amiable in human nature.' When the will was opened, he found that his patron's provision for him, though not liberal, was judicious. In addition to a small pecuniary legacy, he had appointed him his literary executor, with the right to appropriate such sums as the publication of his posthumous papers—and they were voluminous—might realise. These papers Swift published in three instalments, the first appearing in 1700 and the last in 1709.

that any opposition was made to his claim by others of the family setting up a claim of their own; *therefore* he is lord of the inheritance. The reply is that they were at first all living in peace together, and that they did not oppose his claim for the simple reason that he never advanced it, but that they are perfectly prepared, now that he has advanced it, to resist him. 'Tell us by what right or justice you can pretend to be sole lord of this inheritance. Let the will of our common parent be produced, and this will plainly show that we have as much a share in this estate as you have.' Sharp's *Works*, vii. 94. Nor is it at all unlikely that Swift may have been indebted still further to Sharp. The sermon referred to is one of fourteen which are devoted to an elaborate exposure of the errors and corruptions of the Church of Rome, furnishing indeed, even to minute details, the whole text for Swift's satire, which follows Sharp's commentary step by step. My attention was directed to this interesting parallel by a letter in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for July, 1814, signed 'Indagator.'

It was probably with no regret that Swift turned his back on Moor Park. He was in the prime of youth, the world was before him, and he had assuredly every reason to think that the removal of such obstacles as lay in the road to success would not, to one equipped as he was equipped, prove a very arduous task.

CHAPTER IV

LIFE BETWEEN 1700 AND 1710

DURING the next fourteen years Swift's life was one long and fierce struggle for pre-eminence and dominion. To obtain that homage which the world accords, and accords only, to rank and opulence, and to wrest from fortune what fortune had at his birth malignantly withheld, became the end and aim of all his efforts. 'I will tell you,' he wrote many years afterwards to Pope, 'that all my endeavours from a boy to distinguish myself were only for want of a great title and fortune, that I might be used like a lord by those who have an opinion of my parts, whether right or wrong it is no great matter.' In those days literary distinction was not valued as it is valued in our time. If a man of letters found his way to the tables of the great, he was treated in a manner which offensively reminded him of the social disparity between himself and his host. The multitude regarded him, if he was poor, as was only too likely, with contempt; if he was well to do, with indifference. Hence men ambitious of worldly honour and worldly success shrank from identifying themselves with authorship, and employed their pens only as a means of obtaining Church preferment or political influence. It was so with some of the most distinguished writers

of those times—with Burnet, with Addison, with Sprat, with Rowe, with Price, with Parnell. 'I desire,' said Congreve to Voltaire, 'to be considered not as an author, but as a gentleman.' This perhaps accounts for Swift's carelessness about the fate of his writings, and for the fact that, with two or three unimportant exceptions; nothing that came from his hand appeared with his name. Indeed, on no body of men have the shafts of his terrible scorn fallen so frequently as on those whom we should describe as authors by profession. But, if distinction in literature was not his end, he knew well its value as a means. Many adventurers with resources far inferior to his had already fought their way into the chambers of royalty and to the Episcopal Bench. With what patience under disappointment, with what long-protracted assiduity, with what tact and skill, with what tremendous energy, with what unscrupulous versatility, with what vast expenditure of genius and ability he pursued this object, is now matter of history.

The death of his patron found him without preferment and without a competency. As the King had, however, on the occasion of one of his visits to Moor Park, promised to confer on him a prebend either of Canterbury or of Westminster, he was by no means inclined to despond; and he hastened up to London to remind the King of his promise. His request took the form of a petition, which the Earl of Romney, one of the Lords of the Council, promised to present. This, however, he neglected to do, and Swift, weary of hanging about Kensington, and angry, no doubt, at the King's neglect, accepted an invitation

from the Earl of Berkeley, then one of the Lords Justices of Ireland, to accompany him as chaplain and secretary to Dublin. Berkeley, little knowing the character of the man with whom he had to deal, attempted at first to treat him as superiors were in those days wont to treat dependents. Finding it convenient on his arrival in Ireland to bestow the private-secretaryship on a layman, he suddenly informed Swift that his services as a chaplain were all that would henceforth be expected from him. The deprivation of this office was, however, accompanied with a promise of ecclesiastical preferment. In a few months the rich deanery of Derry chanced to fall vacant. It was in the disposal of Berkeley, and Swift at once applied for it; but the person, one Bushe, who had superseded him in the secretaryship, now prevailed on Berkeley to confer the deanery on another candidate. Swift's rage knew no bounds. Bursting into Berkeley's room, and thundering out to the astonished secretary and his no less astonished principal 'God confound you both for a couple of scoundrels,' he abruptly quitted the Castle. Nor did his wrath end here. He gibbeted his patron in a lampoon distinguished even among his other lampoons by its scurrility and filth. Whether this came to Berkeley's ears is not known. It probably did, and in that case Berkeley's subsequent conduct is in all likelihood to be attributed, not to a sense of justice, nor, as Mr. Forster supposes, to the influence of Lady Berkeley and her daughters, but to a sense of fear. He had probably the sagacity to see that no public man could afford to make an enemy of a writer so powerful and so unscrupulous as Swift. What is certain is that

his Excellency lost little time in appeasing his infuriated chaplain. In a short time Swift was again the inmate of the Castle, and in a few weeks he was in possession of preferment, not indeed equivalent in value to the deanery, but sufficient to maintain him in decency and independence. In March, 1699, he was presented with the rectory of Agher and the vicarages of Laracor and Rathbeggan, in the diocese of Meath. In the following year the prebend of Dunlavin, in St. Patrick's Cathedral, was added to his other preferments. A few months later he took his Doctor's degree in the University of Dublin. For the present, however, he continued to reside as domestic chaplain at the Castle.

In the spring of 1701 Berkeley was recalled, and Swift accompanied him to England. He found the country convulsed with civil discord; the unpopularity of the King was at its height; disgraceful feuds divided the two Houses; a war with France was apparently imminent. This latter disaster the Tories attributed to the Partition Treaties, and, as the Tories had just won a great victory, they were determined to indemnify themselves for their recent depression by giving full scope to resentment and vengeance. With this object they were hurrying on impeachments against the four Whig Ministers, who were, it was supposed, responsible for the second of these obnoxious treaties. Swift was not the man to remain a mere spectator where he was so well qualified to enter the arena, and in the summer of 1701 appeared his first contribution to contemporary politics. It was a treatise in five chapters, entitled *A Discourse of the Contests and Dissensions between the Nobles and the*

Commons in Athens and Rome; and it was written to vindicate the Whig Ministers, to defend the King's foreign policy, and to allay the intemperate fury of party. It points out that what ruined States in ancient times is quite as likely to ruin States in modern times, that political liberty can only be preserved by the just equilibrium of power at home and power abroad, and that dissension between the ruling bodies in commonwealths must ultimately result either in anarchy or in despotism; and it selects from the political history of Rome and Athens incidents analogous to the incidents then occurring in England. Orford has his analogue in Miltiades and Themistocles, Halifax in Pericles and Alcibiades, Somers in Aristides, and Portland in Phocion. The tone is calm and grave, the style simple, nervous, and clear, but somewhat heavy. What distinguishes it from Swift's other political tracts is its ostentatious parade of classical learning, and the fact that it is purely didactic, that it is without humour and without satire. The work at once attracted attention. Some ascribed it to Burnet, others to Somers; but Swift, for a time at least, kept his own secret and returned to Ireland. Next year, however, he acknowledged the authorship, and was received with open arms by the Whig leaders, who, confessing their obligations to him, promised to do all in their power to serve him. In 1704 appeared a volume which at once raised him to the highest place among contemporary prose writers. It contained the *Tale of a Tub*, the *Battle of the Books*, and the *Discourse on the Mechanical Operation of the Spirit*, a singularly powerful satire, in which he returns again to the sectaries, or modern saints as he calls them, whom

he had lashed so unmercifully in the *Tale of a Tub*. The contempt and loathing with which Swift regarded these fanatics are not difficult to explain. They were the enemies of the Church. They were republicans and levellers in politics. They were distinguished as a body by characteristics which are and always will be particularly odious to men of honesty and good sense. With 'enthusiasm,' even when it was not simulated, he had little sympathy, for he knew its perilous proximity to mere hysterics; but enthusiasm deliberately affected for disguising ignorance and masking lewdness or avarice, as by these people it habitually was, provoked him to fury. The Saints had long been the butts of wits and satirists. South had covered them with ridicule from the pulpit; Butler and Dryden had lashed them in the press. But the vehement vituperation of the sermons on the Christian Pentecost and the Education of Youth, the caustic sarcasm of *Hudibras* and of the *Hypocritical Nonconformist*, and the trenchant raillery of the *Religio Laici* and the *Hind and Panther*, are tame and merciful compared with the cataclysm of filth and vitriol with which the scorn and contempt of Swift overwhelmed them.

The volume containing these pieces was published anonymously. But it was probably soon known, or at least suspected, in literary circles that Swift was the author. From this moment he became a distinguished figure in what were then the favourite haunts of wits and politicians. He renewed his acquaintance with his old schoolfellow Congreve. He grew very friendly with Addison. He did all in his power to ingratiate himself with the Whig leaders; and not without

success. Somers, indeed, contented himself with being civil, but with the more genial Halifax acquaintanceship soon ripened into intimacy. The very remarkable words in which Addison inscribed to him a copy of his *Travels in Italy* sufficiently prove in what estimation the Vicar of Laracor was, even as early as 1705, held by those whose praise was best worth having. 'To Dr. Jonathan Swift'—so runs the inscription—'the most agreeable companion, the truest friend, and the greatest genius of his age.'

The next five years form perhaps the most unsatisfactory period in Swift's life. They were spent partly in Ireland, where he divided his time between Laracor and Dublin, and partly in London, where he passed his mornings in scribbling pamphlets which he never published, his afternoons in dancing attendance on the Whig Ministers, and his evenings in gossiping with Addison and Addison's friends in coffee-houses. The preferment which his new patrons had promised never came, though it appeared to be always on the way. At one moment it seemed probable that he would be promoted to the see of Waterford, at another moment he had some hope of Cork. Then he expressed his willingness to accompany Lord Berkeley as Secretary of the Embassy to Vienna, and at last talked half seriously of going out as a colonial bishop to Virginia. But nothing succeeded, and the fact that nothing succeeded he attributed neither to the cross accidents of fortune nor to the obstinate opposition of the Court, but to the treachery and ingratitude of his friends. Though he still continued to jest and pun with Pembroke and the Berkeleys, to discuss the prospects of the Whigs with Somers, and

to lend an additional charm to the splendid hospitality of Halifax at Hampton Court, his temper grew every day more soured; every day he became more suspicious and sore.

In truth, a breach with the Whigs was inevitable. Even apart from motives of self-interest,—and it would be doing Swift great injustice to suppose that motives of self-interest were the only, or indeed the chief, motives which at this time guided him—he had ample cause for dissatisfaction. If there was one thing dear to him, it was the Established Church. To preserve that Church intact, intact in its ritual, intact in its dogmas, intact in its rights, was in his eyes of infinitely greater importance than the most momentous of those questions which divided party from party. As a politician, he found no difficulty in reconciling the creed of Halifax and Somers with the creed of St. John and Harcourt. He was at one with those who dethroned James and set up William; he was tender with those who spoke respectfully of the doctrines of passive obedience and non-resistance. He figures in history, indeed, as a furious partisan, but nothing is more remarkable than the moderation and tolerance which he always displays in discussing the principles of political opinion. In his own creed he shunned all extremes; it was of the essence of compromise. ‘No man,’ he says in one of the most admirable of his minor tracts, ‘who has examined the conduct of both parties for some years past, can go to the extremes of either without offering some violence to his integrity or understanding.’¹ Again he writes:

¹ *Sentiments of a Church of Englan Man.*

‘In order to preserve the Constitution entire in Church and State, whoever has a true value for either would be sure to avoid the extremes of Whig for the sake of the former, and the extremes of Tory for the sake of the latter.’¹ But all traces of this moderate spirit disappear the moment the Church is in question. As an ecclesiastic, he was intolerant even to ferocity. The Reformed Protestant Church was in his eyes the only religious institution which civil authority should recognise; its doctrines the only doctrines which should be held to constitute the faith of Christians. ‘The Church of England,’ he says, and has said over and over again in almost the same words, should ‘be preserved entire in all her rights, power and privileges; all doctrines relating to her government discouraged which she condemns; all schisms, sects and heresies discountenanced.’² The depth and sincerity of his convictions on this point are strikingly illustrated by the fact that when, as leader of Irish opposition to England, it was plainly his interest to unite men of all religions against the Government, his hostility to such as lay outside the pale of the Protestant Church was as obstinate and uncompromising as ever. In his writings he makes no distinction between Papists and Atheists, between Presbyterians and Free Thinkers. He was in favour of the Penal Laws. He upheld the cruellest of those statutes which excluded Nonconformists from the rights of citizens. On these points his opinion was at variance with that of the party to which he was politically attached, and entirely in harmony with that held by the

¹ *Sentiments of a Church of England Man.*

² *Free Thoughts upon Present Affairs.*

party to which he was politically opposed. It was not, however, till 1708 that Swift began to see clearly that the interests of his order and the interests of his party were irreconcilable. In that year it became evident that the Church was in danger. The Whigs were, in truth, more and more identifying themselves with her enemies. They had already agitated a repeal of the Test Act in favour of the Protestant Dissenters in Ireland, and its repeal would probably soon be moved in England. The contempt in which many of them held the religion of the State was notorious. Indeed, Cowper, the Chancellor, Somers, the President of the Council, and Wharton, the Viceroy of Ireland, were popularly regarded as little better than infidels. Nor was this all. In the Whig ranks were to be found that odious clique—at the head of which were Toland, Tyndal, and Collins—a clique whose avowed object was the demolition of orthodoxy. Under these circumstances Swift published, in 1708, his *Sentiments of a Church of England Man*, a pamphlet in his best manner, temperate in tone, forcible and luminous in style. He here defines his position, and here for the first time his dissatisfaction with his party is discernible. This was succeeded by that inimitable satire on Free Thinkers, the *Argument against Abolishing Christianity*. Never, perhaps, has the truth of Horace's remark that pleasantry is, as a rule, far more efficacious than vehemence and severity been more strikingly illustrated than in this short piece.

But it was not as a satirist only that he designed to combat the enemies of Christianity. He had gathered materials for an elaborate refutation of one

of the most obnoxious of Tyndal's publications, an interesting fragment of which may be found in the eighth volume of his collected writings.¹

Meanwhile, the Whigs in Ireland were pushing on the repeal of the Test Act, and in December appeared Swift's famous letter concerning the Sacramental Test. The defeat of the Bill followed. It was believed that Swift's pamphlet had turned the scale against Repeal; and from this moment all cordiality between himself and his party was at an end. In his next treatise, *A Project for the Advancement of Religion*, there was, no doubt, as much policy as piety. It appears to have been written partly to ingratiate himself with the Queen, partly to insinuate that Whig dominion was inimical alike to morality and religion, and partly to confirm the reaction which was now beginning to take the turn in favour of the Church party. No man who knew the world as the author of this work knew it could have seriously entertained many of the schemes which he here gravely propounds. To find Swift in Utopia is to find him where we never found him before and where we shall never find him again. It is not unlikely that he suspected, or had perhaps been informed, that the *Tale of a Tub* might injure his prospects of preferment, and that this tract was written to remove any unfavourable impression which this work may have made on the Queen and other orthodox people. What is certain is that the work is designed to show that the writer is an enthusiast in the cause of religion and orthodoxy, and that

¹ *Remarks upon a Book entitled The Right of the Christian Church, &c.*

religion and orthodoxy should be necessary qualifications for favour and preferment.¹

While he was busy with these works, his humour and drollery were convulsing all London with laughter. Though astrological quackery had long been on the decline, it still found credit with the multitude. Its most distinguished professor at this time was John Partridge, a charlatan who was in the habit of publishing each year an almanack, in which he predicted, with judicious ambiguity, what events were in the course of the year destined to take place. In February, 1708, appeared a pamphlet of a few pages, informing the public that Partridge was an impostor, that a rival prophet was in the field, and that it was the intention of that rival prophet to issue an opposition almanack. The writer then proceeded with great gravity to unfold the future. He scorned, he said, to fence himself, like Partridge, with vagueness and generalities; he should be particular in everything he foretold; he should in all cases name the day; he should often be enabled to name the very hour. 'My first prediction,' he goes on to say, 'is but a trifle;' it relates to Partridge, the almanack maker. 'I have consulted the star of his nativity by my own rules,

¹ This conjecture as to Swift's object in the tract is, it may be added, rendered the more probable by the remarkable notice of the work inserted by Steele, then on friendly terms with him, in the fifth number of the *Tatler*. Compare these sentences: 'It is written with the spirit of one who has seen the world enough to undervalue it with good breeding. The author must certainly be a man of wisdom as well as piety and have spent much time in the exercise of both. . . . The whole air of the book, as to the language, the sentiments, and the reasonings, shows it was written by one whose virtue sits easy about him, and to whom vice is thoroughly contemptible.'

and find he will infallibly die upon the twenty-ninth of March next, about eleven o'clock at night, of a raging fever; therefore I advise him to consider of it and settle his affairs in time.' The pamphlet was signed 'Isaac Bickerstaff,' but it was soon known in literary circles that Isaac Bickerstaff was none other than Jonathan Swift. The thirtieth of March arrived, and out came *The Accomplishment of the First Part of Bickerstaff's Predictions, being an Account of the Death of Mr. Partridge upon the 29th instant*. Here we read how, towards the end of March, Mr. Partridge was observed to droop and languish; how he then grew ill and took to his bed; how, as the end drew near, his conscience smiting him, he sorrowfully confessed that his prophecies were mere impositions, and that he himself was a rogue and a cheat; how the unhappy man 'declared himself a Nonconformist and had a fanatical preacher to be his spiritual guide,' and how, finally, he breathed his last just as Bickerstaff had predicted. To this, in his almanack for 1709, Partridge was fool enough to reply, 'thanking God that he was not only alive, but well and hearty,' and unluckily adding that he was alive also on the day of his alleged demise. Upon that Bickerstaff, in an exquisitely humorous pamphlet, proceeded to assure Partridge that if he imagined himself alive he was labouring under hallucination; alive he may have been on March 29, for his death did not occur till the evening, but dead he most assuredly had been ever since, for he had himself candidly admitted it. 'If,' added Bickerstaff, 'an uninformed carcase still walks about, and is pleased to call itself Partridge, I do not think myself in any way answer-

able for that.' The jest had now become general. The life of the unhappy almanack maker was a burden to him. At home facetious neighbours pestered him with questions as to whether he had left any orders for a funeral sermon, whether his grave 'was to be plain or bricked.' If he appeared in the street he was asked why he was sneaking about without his coffin, and why he had not paid his burial fees. So popular became the name assumed by Swift in this humorous controversy that when, in April, 1709, Steele published the first number of the *Tatler*, it was as Isaac Bickerstaff that he sought to catch the public ear.¹

But controversies of another kind were now fast approaching. The latter half of 1709, and the greater part of 1710, Swift spent in sullen discontent in Ireland. And sorrow also was to visit him. In the spring of 1710 he received the news of his mother's death. 'It was,' he writes with touching particularity, 'between seven and eight on the evening of May 10, 1710, that I received a letter in my chamber at Laracor . . . giving an account that my dear mother died that morning, Monday, April 24, 1710. . . . I have now lost my barrier between me and death. God grant that I may be as well prepared for it as I confidently believe her to have been. If the way to Heaven be through piety, truth, justice, and charity, she is there.' He had the consolation of knowing that he

¹ See, for the whole controversy, *Predictions for the Year 1708: an answer to Bickerstaff*. By a Person of Quality. *The Accomplishment of the First Part of Bickerstaff's Predictions*. *Squire Bickerstaff Detected*. *A Vindication of Isaac Bickerstaff, Esq.* *A Famous Prediction of Merlin*. All printed in Scott's *Swift*, vol. ix.

had been an affectionate and dutiful son, the best and perhaps the only solace in one of the bitterest of human afflictions. Meanwhile, every post was bringing important tidings from London. At the beginning of March had come the news of the impeachment of Sacheverell. In the summer arrived a report that the Ministry were to be turned out. By June 15 Sunderland had been dismissed. By August 23 Godolphin had resigned, the Treasury was in commission, and the ruin of the Whigs imminent. In less than a month—on September 7—Swift was in London. The business which carried him thither was business which had for two years been occupying him. At the suggestion of Bishop Burnet, Anne had, shortly after her accession, consented to waive her claim to the First Fruits and Tenth. The remission extended only to the English clergy, but the Irish Convocation, thinking themselves entitled to the same favour, had petitioned the Lord Treasurer to lay their case before the Queen. With this object they had, in 1708, appointed Swift their delegate. Session after session he had pleaded and importuned, but he had been able to obtain nothing but evasive answers. It was now hoped that an application would be more successful, and this application Swift, in commission with the Bishops of Ossory and Killaloe, was directed to make.

On his arrival in London he found everything in confusion. The Whigs were in panic, the Tories in perplexity. Harley was at the head of affairs, but on which of the two parties Harley intended to throw himself was as yet known to no man. Many believed that few further changes would be made. Others

were of opinion that a Coalition Ministry would be formed. What seemed certain was that no Tory Government would have the smallest chance of standing for a month. By the majority of the Whigs the appearance of Swift was hailed with joy. 'They were,' he writes to Esther Johnson, 'ravished to see me, and would lay hold on me as a twig while they are drowning.'¹ But by Godolphin he was received in a manner which bordered on rudeness, and when he called on Somers it was plain that all he had to expect from the most eminent of the Whigs was cold civility. And now he took a step of which he probably little foresaw the consequences. With Harley he was already slightly acquainted, and at the beginning of October he called on him, explaining the business which had brought him to town, and requesting the favour of an interview. The interview was granted, and in less than a fortnight Swift was the friend and confidant of the leader of the Tories, was assailing his old allies, was fighting the battles of his former opponents.

No action of his life has been so severely commented on as his defection from his party at a crisis when defection is justly regarded as least defensible. But what are the facts of the case? In deserting the Whigs he deserted men from whom in truth he had long been alienated, who were in league with the enemies of his order, who were for factious purposes pursuing a policy eminently disastrous and immoral, and who had treated him personally not merely with gross ingratitude but with unwarrantable disrespect. He was bound to them neither by ties of duty nor by

¹ *Journal to Stella*, Sept. 9, 1710.

ties of sentiment. He owed them nothing, he had promised them nothing. Nor did his apostasy involve any sacrifice of political principle. On all essential points he was, as we have seen, a moderate Whig, and in all essential points a moderate Whig he continued to remain. Whoever will take the trouble to compare what he wrote under the Administration of Godolphin with what he wrote under the Administration of Harley will perceive that he was never, even in the heat of controversy, inconsistent with himself. What he declared to be his creed in his *Sentiments of a Church of England Man*, and in his *Letter concerning the Sacramental Test*, he declared to be his creed in his contributions to the *Examiner*, in his *Free Thoughts on Public Affairs*, in a remarkable letter which, six years after Anne's death, he addressed to Pope,¹ and in his *Memoirs relating to the Change in the Queen's Ministry*. Who ever accused Godolphin and Marlborough of treachery when they deserted the Tories and identified themselves with the Whigs? And yet

¹ This important letter, which is dated Dublin, Jan. 10, 1720-1, is an elaborate exposition of Swift's political creed. In his letter on the Sacramental Test he defines what he calls a Whig: 'Whoever bears a true veneration to the glorious memory of King William as our great deliverer from Popery and Slavery: whoever is firmly loyal to our present Queen, with an utter abhorrence and detestation of the Pretender: whoever approves the succession to the crown in the House of Hanover and is for preserving the doctrine and discipline of the Church of England, with an indulgence for scrupulous consciences; such a man, we think, acts upon right principles and may be justly allowed a Whig.' So in a letter written in 1733 he writes to Lady Betty Germaine: 'As for me, I am of the old Whig principles, without the modern articles and refinements.' So, too, in a letter to Mr. Grant, dated March, 1734, he speaks of 'the old Whig principles which always have been mine.' See, too, his *Letter to a Whig Lord* (*Works*, Scott's edition, iv. 255).

there is nothing which tells against Swift which does not tell with infinitely greater force against them. They deserted the Tories in the interests of the War; he deserted the Whigs in the interests of the Church. They sacrificed principles for party: he sacrificed party for principles. If conclusive proof of his honesty and sincerity were needed, it would be furnished indeed by his conduct and writings during the dominion of the Whigs. Had he allowed motives of self-interest to guide him, he would never have opposed, and opposed to their great annoyance, measures to which the policy of the Whig leaders was pledged. But to Occasional Conformity, and to all other attempts to relax, much more to rescind, the provisions of the Test Act, his attitude had, since 1706, been that of determined and uncompromising hostility. And he had made no secret of his opinions.¹ He had embarrassed his party by opposing toleration in Ireland and by opposing it in Scotland. 'No prospect of making my fortune'—such was his language to Archbishop King in 1708—'shall ever prevail on me to go against what becomes a man of conscience and truth, and an entire friend of the Established Church.'² Nor was this all. As the friend of the Church, he was the friend of the throne; as a minister of religion and as a patriotic citizen, he was opposed to the superfluous sacrifice of life and money. The disrespect with which the Whigs habitually treated the Queen was as notorious as the fact that for party purposes they were protracting, and

¹ See particularly *Memoirs relating to the Change in the Queen's Ministry*.

² Letter to King, Nov. 9, 1708.

unnecessarily, a sanguinary and ruinous war. To describe, therefore, as Macaulay and others have done, Swift's defection from the Whigs as the conduct of an interested and unscrupulous renegade, is as absurd as it is unjust. He went over to Harley, it is true, at a time when the Whigs were in trouble, but it ought in justice to be remembered that he went over to him at a time when there were probably not ten men in London who believed that the new Ministry would stand. But here apology must end. The rancour and malignity which mark his attacks on his old associates, many of them men to whose probity and disinterestedness he had himself given eloquent testimony, admit of no justification. He had, we may be sure, honestly persuaded himself that it was his duty, both in the interests of the State and in the interests of the Church, to break with the Whigs, but it would be absurd to deny that his hostility on public grounds was sharpened by private animosity.

CHAPTER V

DURING THE ADMINISTRATION OF HARLEY, 1710-1714

I

No other man of letters has ever occupied a position similar to that which Swift held during the Administration of Harley. Ostensibly a mere dependent, the power which he virtually possessed was autocratical. Without rank, without wealth, without office, rank, wealth, and authority were at his feet. The influence which he exercised on all with whom he came in contact resembled fascination. Men little accustomed to anything but the most deferential respect submitted meekly to all the caprices of his insolent temper. Noble ladies solicited in vain the honour of his acquaintance. The heads of princely houses bore from him what they would have resented in an equal. Indeed, the liberties which he sometimes took with social superiors are such as to be scarcely credible. On one occasion, for example, he sent the Lord Treasurer to fetch the principal Secretary of State from the House of Commons, 'For I desire,' he said, 'to inform him with my own lips, that if he dines late I shall not dine with him.' On another occasion, when the Lord Treasurer at one of his levees asked him to present Parnell, Swift coolly replied: 'A man

of genius, my lord, is superior to a lord in high station, and it is becoming therefore that you should seek out Dr. Parnell and introduce yourself.' And so Lord Oxford, 'in the height of his glory,' as Delany puts it, 'had to walk with his Treasurer's staff from room to room through his own Levy enquiring which was Dr. Parnell.'¹ On another occasion, when informed that the Duke of Buckinghamshire—a nobleman whose pride had passed into a proverb—was anxious to be introduced to him, he coolly replied: 'It cannot be, for he has not made sufficient advances.' 'I use them like dogs,' he writes to Stella, 'because I expect they will use me so.' By Harley and St. John, the one the Lord Treasurer, the other the principal Secretary of State, he was treated not merely as an equal but as a brother. He was their companion at home and in business. They indulged him in all his whims. They bore with patience the sallies of his sarcastic humour. They allowed him a licence, both of speech and of action, which they would never have tolerated in a kinsman. When we remember that at the time Swift attained this extraordinary dominion over his contemporaries he was known only as a country priest with a turn for letters, who had come to London partly as an ambassador from the Irish clergy and partly to look for preferment, it may well move our wonder. But it is not difficult to explain. No one who is acquainted with the character of Swift, with his character as it appears in his own writings, as it has been illustrated in innumerable anecdotes, and as it has been delineated by those who were familiar with him, can fail to see that he belonged

¹ Delany's *Observations*, pp. 28-9.

to the kings of human kind. Like Innocent III. and like Chatham, he was one of those men to whom the world pays instinctive homage. Everything about him indicated superiority. His will was a will of adamant; his intellect was an intellect the power and keenness of which impressed or awed everyone who approached him. And to that will and to that intellect was joined a temper singularly stern, dauntless, and haughty. In all he did, as in all he said, these qualities were obtrusively, nay, often offensively, apparent, but nowhere were they written more legibly than in his deportment and countenance. Though his features had not at this time assumed the severity which they assume in the portrait by Bindon, they were, to judge from the picture painted about this time by Jervis, eminently dignified and striking. The portrait is a familiar one—the lofty forehead, the broad and massive temples, the shapely semi-aquiline nose, the full but compressed lips, the dimpled double chin, and the heavy-lidded, clear blue eyes, ‘with the very uncommon archness in them,’¹ rendered peculiarly lustrous and expressive by the swarthy complexion and bushy black eyebrows which set them off. He was, we are told, never known to laugh; his humour, even when most facetious, was without gaiety, and he would sit unmoved while his jest was convulsing the company round him. The expression of his face could never, even in his mildest moods, have been amiable, but when anger possessed him it was absolutely terrific. ‘It would,’ says one who knew him well, ‘be impossible to imagine looks or features which carried in them more terror and

¹ Pope's description in Spence's *Anecdotes*, p. 119 (edit. Singer).

austerity.'¹ 'He kept,' writes Delany, 'every one in awe.'² His manner was imperious and abrupt; to inferiors or to those whom he disliked, contemptuous or insolent. A harsh and unsympathetic voice corresponded with his manner and with his speech. His words—few, dry, and bitter—cut like razors. In his conduct and in his speech lurked a mocking irony, which rendered it impossible even for those who were familiar with him to be altogether easy in his society. What he felt he seldom took pains to conceal, and what he felt for the majority of his fellow-men was mingled pity and contempt.

The biography of Swift between the winter of 1710 and the summer of 1714 is little less than the history of four of the most eventful years in English annals. For during the period which began with the triumph of Harley and ended with the discomfiture of Bolingbroke nothing of importance was done with which he is not associated. So fully, indeed, did he enter into the political life of those stirring times, that a minute history of the Administration of Oxford might without difficulty be constructed from his correspondence and pamphlets.

To one portion of that correspondence a peculiar interest attaches itself. Twenty-one years had passed since Swift first saw Esther Johnson at Moor-Park. She was then a child of seven, he a young man of twenty-two. In spite of this disparity in years the little maid and himself had soon grown intimate. Her innocent prattle served to while away many a sad and weary hour. He would babble to her in her own baby language. He would romp and play with her,

¹ Orrery's *Remarks*, Letter ix.

² *Observations*, p. 18.

and, as her mind expanded, he became her teacher. From his lips she first learned the principles which ever afterwards guided her pure and blameless life. By him her tastes were formed, by him her intellect was moulded. For a while their intercourse was interrupted. Time rolled on. Temple died in 1699. Esther had settled down with a female companion at Farnham. She was then on the eve of womanhood, and rarely has woman been more richly endowed than the young creature who was about to dedicate her life to Swift. Of her personal charms many accounts have survived. Her pale but strikingly beautiful face beamed with amiability and intelligence. Neither sickness nor sorrow could dim the lustre of her fine dark eyes. Over her fair and open brow clustered hair blacker than a raven. Though her figure inclined, perhaps, somewhat too much to *embonpoint*, it was characterised by the most perfect grace. Her voice was soft and musical, her air and manner those of a finished lady. But these were not the qualities which in the eyes of Swift elevated Esther Johnson above the rest of her sex. What he dwells on with most fondness, in the description which he has left of her, are her wit and vivacity, her unerring judgment, her manifold accomplishments, the sweetness and gentleness of her temper, her heroic courage,¹ her large-hearted charity. 'She

¹ It is curious that none of Swift's biographers should in the accounts they have given of Esther Johnson have referred to the very remarkable anecdote which he has recorded to illustrate her courage and presence of mind. 'She and her friend having removed their lodgings to a new house, which stood solitary, a parcel of rogues, armed, attempted the house, where there was only one boy. She was then about four-and-twenty; and having been warned to

excelled in every good quality that can possibly accomplish a human creature,' wrote Swift to Stopford.¹ Delany tells us that he 'had often heard a man of credit and a competent judge declare that he never passed a day in Stella's society wherein he did not hear her say something which he would wish to remember to the last day of his life.'² Few men would have been proof against charms like these. But to Swift Esther Johnson was at eighteen what she had been at seven. To her personal beauty he was not, indeed, insensible, but it formed no link in the chain which bound him to her. Many of the qualities which attracted him were qualities not peculiar to woman, and of the qualities peculiar to woman those which attracted him most were those which form no element in sexual love. Coleridge has conjectured with some plausibility that the name Stella, which is a man's name with a feminine termination, was purposely selected by him to symbolise the nature of his relation with Miss Johnson.³ That

apprehend some such attempt, she learned the management of a pistol; and the other women and servants being half dead with fear, she stole softly to her dining-room window, put on a dark robe to prevent being seen, primed the pistol afresh, gently lifted up the sash, and taking her aim with the utmost presence of mind, discharged the pistol, loaded with bullets, into the body of one villain who stood the fairest mark. The fellow, mortally wounded, was carried off by the rest, and died the next morning; but his companions could not be found. The Duke of Ormond had often drunk her health to me upon that account.' *Character of Mrs. Johnson*. So much for Thackeray's sentimental picture of 'the Saint of English Story,' of the tender drooping victim of unrequited love.

¹ See *Correspondence*, letter dated July 20, 1726. See, too, Swift's *Character of Mrs. Johnson* (*Works*, Scott, ix. 489).

² Delany's *Observations*, p. 66.

³ *Table Talk*, p. 106. The name is, of course, merely the Latinised form of 'Esther.'

he was more attached to that lady than he was to any other human being seems clear, but the love was purely platonic, and there is not the shadow of a reason for believing that a marriage was ever even formally solemnised between them. Of marriage, indeed, he scarcely ever speaks without expressions indicative either of horror or of contempt. He delighted in the society of women; he even preferred their society to that of men. The truth is that, with all his austerity and cynicism, no man was more dependent on human sympathy. That sympathy he found in woman—he sought nothing more. To approach him nearer was to move his loathing. Of the poetry of passion he knew nothing. The grace and loveliness over which an artist or a lover would hang entranced presented themselves to him as they might present themselves to a thoughtful physician. Where the rest of his sex saw only the blooming cheek and the sparkling eye, he saw only the grinning skull behind. Where all else would be sensible of nothing but what was pleasing, he would be sensible of nothing but what was disagreeable. His imagination grew not merely disenchanted but depraved. He appears, indeed, to have been drawn by some strange attraction to the contemplation of everything which is most offensive and most humiliating in our common humanity. But it was the fascination of repulsion. It was of the nature of that morbidity which tortured the existence of Rousseau.¹ His fastidious delicacy

¹ The subject is not a pleasing one, but if the reader will turn to the second volume of the *Confessions*, Part 2, Book 7, p. 210 *seqq.*, he will find a passage which seems curiously illustrative of Swift's peculiarities of temperament. Cf., too, Ovid, *Remed. Amoris*, 429-40; Burton's *Anatomy of Melancholy*, Part 3, Memb. 6, Sect. 3; Browne's *Religio Medici*, Part 1, Sect. 9.

was such that the conditions of physical being seemed to him inexpressibly revolting, and his mind, by continually dwelling on noisome images, became so polluted and diseased, that he looked upon his kind pretty much as the Houyhnhnms of his terrible fiction looked upon the Yahoos.

It was probably with the understanding that she could never be more to him than a sister that, at the beginning of 1701, Miss Johnson consented to settle near him in Ireland. And now commenced that curious history the particulars of which have excited more interest and elicited more comment than any other portion of Swift's biography. What he desired was to establish free and affectionate relations with his young favourite, without compromising either her or himself. It was agreed, therefore, that she was to continue to reside with her companion Mrs. Dingley, and with Mrs. Dingley she continued to reside till her death. The rules which regulated their intercourse never varied. When Swift was in London, the two ladies occupied his lodgings in Dublin; when he returned, they withdrew to their own. At Laracor the arrangements were similar: he never passed a night under the same roof with them. At all his interviews with Miss Johnson Mrs. Dingley was present. It would, says Orrery, be difficult if not impossible to prove that he had ever conversed with her except in the presence of witnesses. With the same scrupulous propriety, what he wrote he wrote for the perusal of both. If Miss Johnson nursed hopes that she might some day become his wife, these hopes must have been speedily dispelled. As early as 1704 the nature of his affection was submitted to a crucial

test. One of his friends, a Mr. Tisdall, sought Esther in marriage. He consulted Swift with the double object of ascertaining whether Swift had himself any idea of marrying her, and, in the event of that not being the case, of soliciting his assistance in furthering his own suit. Swift replied that he had no intention at all of entering into such a relation with her, and, on being assured that Tisdall was in a position to support a wife, expressed his willingness to serve him. It is not unlikely that the whole of this transaction was a stratagem of Miss Johnson's. A bright and lively girl, in the bloom of youth and beauty, is scarcely likely to have adopted by choice the mode of life prescribed by Swift. She wished—who can doubt it?—to be bound to him by dearer ties. If anything could win him, it would be the fear of losing her. If anything could induce him to make her his wife, it would be the prospect of her becoming the wife of another man. She now knew her fate. She accepted it; and Swift was never again troubled with a rival. In Swift's conduct in this matter we fail to see anything disingenuous; he appears to have acted throughout honourably and straightforwardly.¹ Each year drew the bonds of this eccentric connection closer. In Ireland the three friends were daily together, and though, as we have seen, Swift was frequently absent in England, it was always with reluctance that he set out, as it was always with impatience that he looked forward to returning. At last the friends were destined to be separated. From the time of Swift's arrival in

¹ See Swift's letter to Tisdall, *Corresp.*; Scott's *Swift*, xv. 256; and Foster's remarks, *Life of Swift*, pp. 136-39.

England at the beginning of September, 1710, till his return to Ireland as Dean of St. Patrick's in June, 1713, he saw nothing either of Esther or of her companion. But absence was not permitted to interrupt their communion. A correspondence was exchanged as voluminous as that which passed between Miss Byron and Miss Selby. Of this correspondence the portion contributed by Swift is extant, and constitutes, as everyone knows, the *Journal to Stella*. Of the value of those letters, both as throwing light on the political and social history of the early eighteenth century and as elucidating the character and conduct of their writer, it would be superfluous to speak. There is, indeed, no other parallel to them but the parallel which immediately suggests itself—the *Diary of Pepys*. Like Pepys, Swift writes with absolute unreserve. Like Pepys, he is not ashamed to exhibit himself in his weakest moments. Like Pepys, he records—and seems to delight in recording with ludicrous particularity—incidents trivial even to grotesqueness—how he dined and where he dined, what he ate and what he drank, what clothes he bought and what they cost him, what disorders he was suffering from and what disorders his friends were suffering from, what medicine he took and how that medicine affected him, what time he went to bed and on what side of the bed he lay. Side by side with these trivialities we find those vivid pictures of Court and City life in which, as in a living panorama, the London of Anne still moves before us. Nothing escaped his keen and curious glance, and nothing that he saw has he left unrecorded. Indeed, these delightful letters reflect as in a mirror all that was

passing before his eyes and all that was passing in his mind.

On his accession to power, Harley found himself beset with difficulties. The war with France was raging. Little more than a year had passed since the bloodiest and most obstinate of Marlborough's battles had appalled Europe by its carnage. Disaster after disaster had humbled France and shattered her power. Abjectly as she had sued for peace, her proposals had been rejected, and her ruthless foes had broken up the Conference at Gertruydenberg to pursue their destructive course. Mons had succumbed, and the capture of Mons had been succeeded by the fall of Douay and Bethune. In Spain fortune had equally favoured the Allies, and two disastrous defeats had for the moment appeared to render the cause of the Bourbons desperate. But the burden of a struggle in which the sole gainers were Austria and Holland fell on England, and the burden did not fall equally. To the moneyed classes, as they were then called, it was a source of profit, for it raised the value of money; but the landed class suffered, for it depreciated the value of land. And, as the first belonged as a rule to the Whig party and the second to the Tory, it is not surprising that this question linked itself inseparably with other articles in the creed of faction. Indeed, war had now become the touchstone of party feeling. The Tories were bent on bringing it with all expedition to an end; the Whigs, in league with the Allies, were furious for its continuance. It was obvious that without a peace the Ministry must collapse. It was equally clear that to conclude a peace, except on terms highly advantageous to England, might cost Harley not his place

merely but his head. The task before him was therefore twofold. It was necessary to take measures to prosecute the war with vigour, that France might be induced to offer such terms as would satisfy the pride and cupidity of the English, and it was necessary at the same time to render the war and the war party unpopular. In this embarrassing position he was surrounded by colleagues in whom he could place little confidence, and who were divided among themselves. Every day as it passed by increased his perplexity. A great schism had already torn his party into two sections. With the moderate Tories he knew how to deal, and could rely on their hearty co-operation. Over the extreme Tories—and the extreme Tories were in the majority—he had little or no control. Nor was this all. The finances were in deplorable confusion; there was a panic in the City; and so bad was the credit of the new Government that he found it impossible to negotiate a loan sufficient even for the pressing necessities of the moment. Such was the position of affairs when, in the autumn of 1710, Swift joined the Tories.

The secret of Harley's extraordinary civility to Swift soon became apparent. He had had the sagacity to discover what no English minister had discovered before—the power of the press as an engine of political influence; and he had had also the sagacity to foresee that all that that engine could effect it would effect in the hands of his new ally. There was no time for delay. In November Swift undertook the editorship of the *Examiner*. This famous periodical, which was the organ of the Tories, was published weekly. Thirteen numbers had already appeared. Though

written by men whose names stood high both in literature and in politics, none of the papers had made much impression on the public mind. Indirectly, indeed, they had done more mischief than service to the Tory cause, for they had provoked the Whigs to set up an opposition journal, the *Whig Examiner*, and the superiority of the papers in the *Whig Examiner* was so striking that it was admitted even by the Tories themselves. But in Swift's hands the *Examiner* rose to an importance without precedent in journalism. It became a voice of power in every town and in every hamlet throughout England. It was an appeal made, not to the political cliques of the metropolis, but to the whole kingdom, and to the whole kingdom it spoke. In a few months Swift had attained his purpose. He had turned the tide against the Whigs, he had made Harley popular, he had rendered the policy of the Ministry practicable. No one who will take the trouble to glance at Swift's contributions to the *Examiner* will be surprised at their effect. They are masterpieces of polemical skill. Every sentence—every word—comes home. Their logic, adapted to the meanest capacity, smites like a hammer. Their statements, often a tissue of mere sophistry and assumption, appear so plausible, that it is difficult even for the cool historian to avoid being carried away by them. At a time when party spirit was running high, and few men stopped to weigh evidence, they must have been irresistible. To one part of his task it is evident that Swift applied himself with peculiar zest. He had now an opportunity for avenging the slights and disappointments of years, and he made, it must be admitted, the best of

his opportunity. Nothing can exceed the malignity and bitterness of his attacks on his old allies. He assails them sometimes with irony, sometimes with damning innuendo, sometimes in the language of ribald scurrility, and sometimes in the language of fleeing scorn. Descending to the grossest personalities, he charges Somers with immorality and atheism; he holds up to contempt the low tastes of Godolphin; he taunts Cowper with libertinism and bigamy. Then, spurning meaner adversaries under his feet, disposing of one with an epithet, of another in a parenthesis, he strikes full at the towering crest of Marlborough. One paper dilates on his avarice, another on his unprincipled ambition; here he reproaches him with being the slave of a harridan consort, there he lashes him as a traitor to William and an ingrate to Anne. But his onslaughts on these distinguished men are mercy compared with those terrible philippics in which he gave vent to his rage against Wharton. Of all the Whigs, Wharton was the most odious to him. It was Wharton who had deprived him of his place at the Court of the Lord Lieutenant; it was Wharton who had spoken lightly of his personal character; it was Wharton who had agitated the repeal of the Test Act. In his second *Examiner* Swift was at the throat of his victim, and with each number his satire gathers animosity and venom. Every crime which can load a public man with obloquy, every vice and every folly which in private life sink men in contempt and shame, are described as uniting in this abandoned noble. He is the Verres of Ireland, with a front more brazen, with a nature fouler and more depraved, than that of the

arch-villain of Cicero; he is a public robber, a poltroon, a liar, an infidel, a libertine, a sot. The merciless satirist then goes on to accuse him of atrocities too horrible to specify. With these charges he dealt at length in a separate pamphlet; for, not content with flaying his enemy in the *Examiner*, he published at the end of November, 1710, *A Short Character of Thomas, Earl of Wharton*, a satire absolutely appalling in its malignity and force.

It was not likely that the Whigs would suffer their leaders to be thus maltreated with impunity. Though the *Whig Examiner* had died, the *Medley* and the *Observer* were in vigorous activity. The staff of both papers was a powerful one, and Swift soon found himself front to front with assailants as rancorous and as unscrupulous as himself. During seven months the paper war raged with a fury never before known in the history of political controversy, and during seven months Swift engaged single-handed with the whole force of the Whig press; wielding, like Homer's Agamemnon, spear, sword, and boulder-stone—

ὁ τῶν ἄλλων ἐπεώλειτο στίχας ἀνδρῶν,
Ἐγχεῖ τ', ἄορί τε, μεγάλοισι τε χερμαδίοισιν.

But, in spite of all the efforts of their indefatigable champion, the Ministry appeared to be engaged in a losing battle, and were almost in despair. 'They are,' wrote Swift to Stella,¹ 'upon a very narrow bottom, and stand like an isthmus between the Whigs on one side and the violent Tories on the other. They are able seamen, but the tempest is too great, the ship too

¹ *Journal*, March 4, 1711.

rotten, and the crew all against them.' Suddenly, however, an event occurred which gave a new turn to affairs. A French adventurer who had become acquainted with St. John had, on his friend's accession to office, obtained from him the promise of 500*l.* a year. This pension Harley had reduced, and had declined also to guarantee its permanence or its regular payment. The fellow, angry with the minister, and desperate from poverty, had entered into treasonable correspondence with France. It was discovered. He was arrested and brought before a Committee of the Privy Council at the Cock-pit. In the course of his examination he had requested to be allowed to speak privately with St. John. The request was refused. Upon that he suddenly produced a penknife, and stooping forward stabbed Harley, who was sitting near him, just above the heart. The blade broke against the breast-bone, and the wound was fortunately not fatal. There is not the smallest reason for supposing that Guiscard—for that was the assassin's name—had any other motive for what he did than rage and chagrin at what he conceived to be private wrongs. But Harley and Swift at once saw how much political capital could be made out of an incident which naturally enough caused immense public excitement. Swift at once set to work. He furnished Mrs. Manley with facts for *A True Narrative of what passed at the Examination of the Marquis de Guiscard*, instructing her how to treat them and how to colour them. The affair became his leading theme in four papers of the *Examiner*. With admirable skill he manages, without actually falsifying facts, to create a totally false im-

pression of the whole transaction. The grievance of a private man on private grounds was transformed into the hostility of a public enemy. He had not indeed the audacity to state that Guiscard had been suborned by the Whigs, the Papists, and the French, but he insinuates it. It was probably, he says, Guiscard's design to assassinate the Queen as it was certainly his design to assassinate St. John, but, as these 'enemies of France and Popery' had not come within his reach, he had been obliged to content himself with a single victim. He then proceeds to enlarge on all that could intensify the sympathy naturally felt for Harley, on his heroism at the awful moment when he received, as he then thought, his death-blow, on his patriotism, on his loyalty, on his magnificent public services. Though Harley had escaped with his life, his sufferings were severe and his recovery slow. When he reappeared in public it was at once apparent that the knife of Guiscard and the pen of Swift had done him yeoman's service. A reaction had set in in his favour. He found the Queen cordial, the people enthusiastic, his colleagues, with one exception, more tractable. On May 24 he was Earl of Oxford and Mortimer, on the 29th Lord Treasurer.

In the middle of July, 1711, Swift's contributions to the *Examiner* ceased. A series of pamphlets now flowed from his pen in rapid succession. In his *Remarks on a Letter to the Seven Lords* he retorts with great asperity on certain Whig journalists, who had in a recent publication accused him of circulating calumnious reports against the committee who examined Greg in 1708. But these controversies

were only preliminary to the most important of his services to the Ministry. The pivot on which the political fortunes of his party turned was peace with France. It was the measure to which on their accession to power they were pledged; it was the measure on which their continuance in power depended. Without peace their fall was certain. So enormous and complicated were the difficulties in which the protraction of the war was even now involving them, that the Ministry were already beginning to despair. 'We have nothing,' wrote St. John, 'in possession, and hardly anything in expectation; our government is in a consumption, our vitals are consuming, and we must inevitably sink at once.' But, tremendous as these difficulties were, the attempts of Harley and St. John to extricate themselves and their party by pressing on the conclusion of the war had involved them in difficulties of a still more formidable kind. As early as the autumn of 1710 clandestine negotiations had been opened with France. During the winter of that year, and all through the spring and summer of 1711, a surreptitious correspondence had been carried on between Harley and St. John and the agents of the French King. In September eight Preliminary Articles of Peace had, with the privity and consent of the Queen, been secretly signed. By an unfortunate accident these dishonourable negotiations had been very nearly publicly detected. Prior, who had been sent on a clandestine mission to France, was on his return detained at Deal. It was known that he was in the confidence of the Ministry, and that he was ordinarily employed in diplomatic business. The officer who arrested him was not discreet. The

news soon spread. The suspicion of the Whigs was aroused. Harley and St. John, thankful, no doubt, that nothing more had been discovered than that peace with France was contemplated, thought it best, probably with the object of sounding public opinion, to allow what was practically the ministerial organ, the *Post Boy*, to hazard conjectures as to the terms on which peace was likely to be settled. It is clear from the *Journal to Stella* that up to this point at least Harley and St. John had not taken Swift into their confidence, and that he knew nothing of these negotiations.¹ But it was probably at their instigation that he wrote that pleasant *jeu d'esprit*, *A New Journey to Paris*, in which he endeavoured to throw public curiosity on a false scent by pretending to give a detailed account of Prior's adventures and business in France. The two ministers now, as the *Journal* shows, concealed nothing from him but the transactions in which they were engaged with the Pretender and his agents.² Towards the end of September it was known throughout the country that negotiations for peace were in progress. The Whigs and the Allies were furious. It was in vain for the Tories to retort, in answer to taunts of treachery and perfidy, that the war had reduced the country to the point of bankruptcy; that what had in 1702 cost England less than four millions was now, in consequence of the failure of the Allies to supply what they had undertaken to supply, costing her eight millions; that we had entered into it merely as auxiliaries, that we had for some years been engaging in it as principals; that the original objects of it had long been attained; and

¹ *Journal to Stella*, Aug. 24, 1711.

² *Id.*, Sept. 28.

that to protract it further was to ruin England for the aggrandisement of Austria and Holland abroad, and for the profit of stock-jobbers and usurers at home. The Whigs were as impervious to the testimony of facts as they were deaf to reason and argument. Every artifice of sophistry and rhetoric was employed to cast discredit on the advocates for peace and to swell the clamour for war. Again the Ministry had recourse to the pen of Swift. At the end of November appeared *The Conduct of the Allies*. It appeared anonymously, but in forty-eight hours the first edition had run out; in five hours a second edition was exhausted, and within a few days no less than five editions were in circulation. Nor is this surprising. Levelled to the capacity of the meanest understanding, it urged with irresistible power and cogency all that could be advanced against the war party on the side of testimony, and all that could be deducted, for their refutation, on the side of argument. The style and tone of this masterly pamphlet are adapted with great skill both to the popular taste and to the reason of thoughtful men. Nothing, for example, could bring home to the vulgar the folly of glorying in war that posterity might be proud of us more forcibly than the following: 'It will no doubt be a mighty comfort to our grandchildren to see a few rags hung up in Westminster Hall which cost a hundred millions, whereof they are paying the arrears, to boast, as beggars do, that their grandfathers were rich and great.' The influence of this pamphlet was co-extensive with its popularity. It touched the nation to the quick. From that moment the fate of Marlborough and the Allies was sealed. From that

moment victory, however it fluctuated, declared for the Tories.

II

Up to this time the writings of Swift had, since the publication of the *Tale of a Tub*, dealt almost entirely with subjects of ephemeral interest. In pure literature he had produced little or nothing. A few copies of occasional verses—such verses, for example, as *Baucis and Philemon*, an adaptation of the well-known story in Ovid (suggested, perhaps, by Chaucer's similar transformation of the story of Apollo and Coronis from the same work), the *Description of a City Shower*, a few unimportant contributions to the *Tatler*,¹ and one or two short trifles scarcely intended, perhaps, for the public eye—would probably exhaust the list. But in the summer of 1711 an incident occurred which recalled him for a moment from politics to letters. That incident was the foundation of the famous Brothers' Club,² one of those institutions

¹ In the *Tatler* his only entire paper was No. 230, on 'Popular Corruptions of Language.' He contributed to No. 9 the verses on 'A Morning in Town'; to No. 32 the 'History of Madonella'; to No. 63 the letter ridiculing the college for young damsels; to No. 35 the letter signed 'Eliz. Potatrix'; to No. 59 the letter signed 'Obadiah Greenhat'; to No. 66 the remarks on pulpit oratory in the first part of the paper; portions of Nos. 67 and 68; to No. 70 the letter on pulpit eloquence; to No. 71 the admonitory letter to the vicar and schoolmaster; to No. 238 the verses on the 'City Shower'; to No. 258 the letter on the words 'Great Britain'—this he wrote in conjunction with Prior and Rowe. In the *Spectator* he supplied hints for No. 50, and was, perhaps, the author of a paragraph in No. 575. See Drake's *Essays on the Tatler and Spectator*, vol. iii., and Scott's *Swift*, vol. ix.

² This club must be distinguished from the meetings held at Harley's house, generally on Saturdays, and occasionally on the same day (Thursday) on which the Brothers met. The company here

which shed peculiar lustre on the reign of Anne. It was a club founded by the leaders of the Tory party, and it numbered among its members the most distinguished Tories then living. Its object was, in the words of Swift, to encourage literature by the judicious dispensation of patronage, to improve conversation, and to temper party ardour with humanity and wit. In its meetings all those artificial distinctions which separate caste from caste and man from man were ignored. Its members met and mingled on terms of fraternal equality. As brothers, indeed, they addressed each other. Among the brethren were—in addition to Swift, Arbuthnot, Friend, and Prior—the heads of three ducal houses, Ormond, Beaufort, and Shrewsbury, the Lord Treasurer Oxford, St. John, then leader of the Lower House, the Solicitor-General Raymond, Lords Arran, Dupplin, Lansdowne, Bathurst, and the Earl of Orrery. Nothing illustrates more pleasingly than

consisted of the Lord Keeper Harcourt, Earl Rivers, the Earl of Peterborough, and St. John, to whom were subsequently added the Dukes of Ormond, Shrewsbury, and Argyle, Earl Poulett, and the Earls of Anglesey, Dartmouth, and Berkeley. Swift was the only person without title and without office who was admitted as a regular guest at these meetings. 'They had,' said Mr. Forster, 'the character of Ministerial meetings, and the day when Swift was admitted to them was practically that of his appointment as a minister without office.' *Life of Swift*, p. 359. This is very doubtful; it is certainly difficult to reconcile with Swift's statement in the *Journal to Stella*, Feb. 26, 1712-13, 'I know less of what passes than anybody because I go to no coffee-houses nor see any but ministers and such people, and ministers never talk politics in conversation.' Cf. too *Id.*, Dec. 26, 1712. In his *Memoirs relating to the Change* he seems exactly to describe his position: 'My early appearance at these meetings, which many thought to be of greater consequence than they really were,' &c.; see *Scott's Swift*, iii. 246-7.

this society the most charming feature in the social life of that age. Never, since the gatherings at which Augustus and Mæcenas assembled on the Palatine the wit and genius of Rome, had the alliance between the class which governs and the class which adorns a nation been so close and so honourable. From the reigns of Elizabeth and James men of letters had never, it is true, lacked patrons either in the Ministry or among the aristocracy. At the Revolution, and during the early years of Anne, they had grown in favour and reputation. Some of the leading Whig statesmen—Somers, for example, and Halifax—had prided themselves on their connection with letters. Indeed, at no period had literary merit been so munificently rewarded. But the relative position of the two classes had never changed. The barriers which fortune had placed between them had always been jealously guarded. The language in which Addison addresses Halifax and Somers differs in no respect from the language in which Spenser addressed Leicester; Shakespeare, Southampton; and Dryden, Dorset or Rochester. It is the language of respectful homage; it sometimes savours of servility; it is in all cases that of an inferior addressing a superior. It may be doubted whether any of the ordinary nobility condescended to associate even with the most distinguished of their clients as friend with friend. The reserve and hauteur displayed by Somerset, Buckinghamshire, and Nottingham in their intercourse with men of letters were proverbial. When Prior was appointed to act with the Earl of Strafford as Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary for the Peace of Utrecht, Strafford refused to be joined in

commission with a commoner, and caused much inconvenience by doing so. To the members of the Brothers' Club belongs the honour of having been the first to recognise in men of parts and genius not objects of patronage merely, but companions and equals. Though Swift was not, as Scott erroneously supposes, the founder of this society, he was undoubtedly one of its most influential members. He was treasurer; he dispensed its charity; he proposed candidates for election; he prevented the election of candidates proposed by others. He was its presiding genius. In the *Journal to Stella* the meetings of the club are regularly chronicled, and nothing is more characteristic of Swift than these records. To indemnify himself for the want of fortune and title by seizing every pretext for slighting and mortifying their more favoured possessors was to him a source of the most exquisite pleasure. And in that pleasure he could now indulge to the full. He opposed the election of the Lord Keeper and the Lord Treasurer, though their sons were members. He excluded the Earl of Jersey, he attempted to exclude the Duke of Beaufort. He 'opposed Lord Arran to his face.' The election of the Duke of Beaufort was carried in spite of him, but when the Duke 'had the confidence to propose his brother-in-law, the Earl of Danby,' Swift opposed the application so strongly that it was waived. It is amusing to find him—and in all gravity—'holding out hopes' to the Duke of Shrewsbury.

In his conversations with the brethren he had often discussed a scheme which had long been in his mind. This was the foundation of an Academy for fixing and correcting the English language. The

scheme was no doubt suggested by the Italian and French Academies, but the idea was not new, even in England. Towards the end of Charles II.'s reign, Dillon, Earl of Roscommon, had not only proposed the same scheme, but had made some progress in carrying it out. With the assistance of Dryden and others he had begun to form a society on the model of an institution to which he had been introduced at Caen,¹ 'for the refining and fixing the standard of our language.' But the design had been interrupted by the civil troubles at the commencement of James II.'s reign, and on the Earl's death, shortly afterwards, it had collapsed. Then De Foe attempted to revive it, and gave it, in his *Essay on Projects*, a prominent place among the institutions which he hoped to see established. But De Foe had little authority and no influence. Roscommon had found an ally in the Marquis of Halifax. Swift hoped to find an ally and patron in Harley. His cause was a good one and he pleaded it powerfully. He was, he said, convinced that, if some stand was not made against the tide of corruption which was from all sides pouring in upon our language, that language would in less than two centuries be an unintelligible jargon. From the time of the civil struggles its pollution had been systematic. First it had been invaded by the cant of the Puritans, then by the still more offensive cant of the Cavaliers. Later on it had been vitiated by licentious abbreviations. Its grammar was unsettled and abounded in solecisms. It fluctuated, in fact, with every colloquial fashion; and with every colloquial fashion it would,

¹ See the *Memoirs of Roscommon*, compiled from Fenton's notes, and cf. Johnson's *Life of Roscommon*.

unless proper measures were taken, continue to fluctuate. He proposed, therefore, that a committee should be formed, composed of such persons as should be generally admitted to be most qualified for the task, that they should meet at an appointed place, that their expenses should be defrayed by the State, and that they should be authorised to ascertain and fix our language. This proposal he embodied in a letter to the Lord Treasurer, which was published in May, 1712, and was much discussed in literary circles. The Lord Treasurer professed to be greatly interested in the scheme. He would give it, he said, his most serious consideration. But his encouragement extended only to words, and the project fared as such projects always have fared at the hands of English statesmen.

Out of the Society of Brothers sprang the still more famous Scriblerus Club. This undoubtedly owed its origin to Swift, though Arbuthnot seems to have been the creator of the hero who gave the club its name. The Scriblerians, like the Brothers, had no settled place for assembling. When they met they met at each other's houses. The topics discussed were as a rule purely literary, and seldom have men so well qualified to shine in such discussions gathered together at the same table. First in reputation, and first in colloquial ability, stood Congreve, who, though comparatively young in years, had already taken his place among classics as the Molière of England. He had won his laurels when Dryden still presided at Will's, and he had lived among the flower of an age now fast becoming historical. With a weakness not uncommon among men of his class, he affected in

general society to attach more importance to his reputation as a man of fashion and gallantry than to his fame as a writer. But Congreve as he revealed himself to the world, and Congreve as he revealed himself in the Scriblerus meetings, were very different persons. The wit which blazes in his comedies sparkled in his discourse. He overflowed with anecdote and pleasantry. His mind had been assiduously cultivated. He was not only an accomplished Latinist, but he was one of the few Englishmen then living who were familiar with the poetry of Greece. Sixteen years junior to Congreve was Pope, whose *Essay on Criticism* and *Rape of the Lock* had given fine promise of the great future before him. He was now busy with the translation of the *Iliad*. Under what circumstances and at what period he became acquainted with Swift we have now no means of knowing. They were certainly on intimate terms in the winter of 1713. Another distinguished Scriblerian was Atterbury. In Atterbury the Universities of that day recognised their most finished product. His graceful scholarship, his refined taste, his varied acquirements, his polished and luminous eloquence, had placed him in the first rank of literary churchmen. The part he had played in the Phalaris Controversy, and the part he had played still more recently in the controversy with Wake, had proved that his superior in polemical skill was not to be found. His learning, indeed, if we may judge from his dissertations and sermons, was neither exact nor deep, but it was elegant, curious, and extensive. French he both spoke and wrote with Parisian purity. In the vernacular and Latin poetry of modern Italy he was probably better versed than any

other man in England. But it was not as a scholar or as a controversialist that Atterbury was most valued by those who knew him. On all questions pertaining to the niceties of criticism he was an unerring guide, for his judgment was clear and solid, his perception fine, and his taste pure even to fastidiousness. In no contemporary critic had Pope so much confidence. Atterbury's approving nod relieved his mind of any doubt he might have about the excellence of a verse. It was at Atterbury's advice that he committed to the flames a work on which he had expended great labour and on which he had himself passed a more favourable verdict. Of a very different order were the genius and character of John Gay. The early part of his life had been passed behind a linendraper's counter in the City. He had received no regular education, and had, on emerging from obscurity, been too indolent to remedy the defect. A smattering of Latin and a smattering of French and Italian constituted all his stock as a scholar; but, if he owed little to the schools, he owed much to nature—a rich vein of genial humour, wit less abundant, indeed, and less brilliant, than that of his friends Congreve and Pope, but scarcely less pleasing, native grace, and, what were rare with the poets of that age, spontaneity and simplicity. His first experiment had been made in serious poetry, and in serious poetry Gay never rises, even in his happiest moments, above mediocrity. But this poem he had judiciously dedicated to Pope, then fast rising into reputation; and Pope, charmed with his young admirer's unaffected modesty, sprightly conversation, and amiable temper, took him under his protection. The favourable impression which he

made on Pope he made on Swift; and when the Scriblerus Club was formed, Gay, though he had as yet produced nothing which entitled him to so high an honour, was invited to join it. Next came Thomas Parnell. Few things in literary history are more remarkable than the fate which has befallen this once popular poet. The praises of his personal friends, though these friends were Pope and Swift, may be suspected of partiality,¹ but so late as 1760 Hume placed Parnell among the very few poets whom a reader of mature taste would delight in re-perusing for the fiftieth time. His biography was written in a laudatory strain by Goldsmith, and the eulogies of Goldsmith were repeated by Johnson. Since then, however, his fame has been rapidly declining, and is now almost extinct. But his poetry has not deserved this fate. It has often a charm which makes Hume's remark perfectly intelligible. His touches of sentiment and his pictures of nature are sometimes exquisite. His *Hermit* is, in point of execution, a perfect gem. His *Fairy Tale* is delightful, and no reader of taste and sensibility could peruse such poems as the *Night Piece* and the *Hymn to Contentment* without feeling that he was in communion with genius, if not of a high, certainly of a fine order. He seems to anticipate Goldsmith on one side and Gray on another. To his brother-poets Parnell owed nothing. He chose his own themes, he treated those themes in his own way, and never conventionally. His versification—and his versification is peculiarly his own—is singularly soft and musical.

¹ Swift says of him, *Journal to Stella*, 'He passes all the poets of the day by a bar's length.'

But the member who fills the largest space in the history of Swift's Club remains to be mentioned. This was ~~Dr. John Arbuthnot~~. Arbuthnot is one of those figures on which the memory loves to dwell. If we are to credit the testimony of men little prone either to exaggeration or to delusion, his character approached as near to perfection as it is possible for humanity to attain. His charity, his benevolence, his philanthropy, were boundless. He possessed, says Swift, every quality and every virtue which can make a man either amiable or useful. Ill-health and adverse fortune were powerless to ruffle his gentle and equable temper.¹ But the beauty of his character was equalled by the vigour and amplitude of his mind. 'I think Arbuthnot,' said Johnson, speaking of the wits of Anne's reign, 'the first man among them; he was the most universal genius.'² His literary and scientific attainments were immense. While a mere youth he distinguished himself in a controversy with the veteran geologist Woodward. His *Tables of Ancient Coins, Weights, and Measures* long remained a standard work, and, though his medical writings have, like all the medical writings of past time, been superseded, they entitle him to an honourable place among the fathers of his profession. To one of his treatises particular praise is due, for in his *Dissertation on the Regularity of Births in the Two Sexes* he may be said to have laid the foundation of the science of Vital Statistics. Nor is he without striking merit as a poet. His *Γνώθι Σεαυτὸν*, published in *Dodsley's Collection*,³ which would have done honour to Dryden

¹ For a beautiful picture of Arbuthnot see Chesterfield's *Characters*.

² Boswell's *Johnson*. Croker's one-vol. ed. p. 145.

³ *Supplement*, i. 192 *seqq.*

and Pope, has a condensed energy of thought, an originality, and a vigour of expression, such as few other poems of that age possess. In addition to these accomplishments he was an amateur musician, and an anthem by him, *As pants the Hart*, is in the collection of the Chapel Royal.¹ But it is not as a man of science, nor as a writer, that the world is most familiar with Arbuthnot's name. The lustre of that name is still indeed untarnished by time, but it shines now rather with reflected light than with light emanating from itself. By modern readers he is remembered chiefly as the friend of Pope and Swift; to modern readers he lives, not so much as the author of the *History of John Bull*, as the dedicatee of the *Prologue to the Satires*. Very different was the position he held among those who knew him, and among those who had inherited the traditions of those who knew him. Of his wit and humour both Pope and Swift speak in terms of extravagant praise. 'He has,' said Swift, 'more wit than we all have.' 'In wit and humour,' observed Pope, 'I think Arbuthnot superior to all mankind.' Half a century later Johnson rated him almost as highly. And in our own time Macaulay has not hesitated to pronounce the *History of John Bull* the most ingenious and humorous satire extant in the English tongue. The truth is that Arbuthnot's literary fame has suffered from causes which must sooner or later preclude any writer from permanent popularity. With two exceptions, the first book of the *Memoirs of Scriblerus* and the inimitable *Epitaph on Chartres*, his satires must be unintelligible to a reader not minutely versed in the politics of that

¹ Macmichael's *Gold-headed Cane*, p. 83.

time. No satire in itself so intrinsically excellent is so little capable of universal application. His wit, his humour, his sarcasm, exhausting themselves on particular persons and on particular events, now require an elaborate commentary. There is, moreover, nothing either striking or felicitous in his style. The *History of John Bull* and the *Art of Political Lying* will probably not find half a dozen readers in as many years, but we venture to think that out of these readers there will be one or two who will have no difficulty in understanding the position which Arbuthnot once held.

Last of this illustrious group of wits comes William Fortescue, afterwards Master of the Rolls. A descendant of the celebrated Chief Justice, and a man of ample fortune, he had joined the Bar to divert his mind from the grief occasioned by the loss of his wife. Gay, who is said to have been his school-fellow at Barnstaple, introduced him to Pope, and Pope to the Scriblerians. At what time he became a member of the Club does not appear, but he is described as their legal adviser.¹ He was an accomplished and good-natured man, and so great a lover of mirth that Jervas has in one of his letters to Pope described him as laughing Fortescue. When Pope imitated the first satire of the second book of Horace he very happily substituted Fortescue for Trebatius.

Such were the men in whose society Oxford and Bolingbroke forgot the cares of State, whose gatherings have been immortalised by Pope, and whose diversions have enriched literature with compositions which the world will not readily let die. For out of these diver-

¹ *Suffolk Papers*, i. 202.

sions grew many years afterwards *Gulliver's Travels* and the fourth book of the *Dunciad*.

The project with which the Scriblerians sought to amuse themselves was the production of a comprehensive satire on the abuses of human learning. These abuses were to be satirised in the person of one Martinus Scriblerus, a foolish and conceited pedant who, with a head replete with learning, was entirely devoid of taste, discrimination, and good sense. The germ of the work may perhaps be traced in the *Tale of a Tub*. Martin is not indeed the counterpart of Swift's fictitious author, who is represented not as vain and stupid only, but as ignorant and illiterate. He is, however, Swift's pretentious blockhead refined into a really learned fool. Both are satires on the abuse of learning, but with this difference: Martin is to Swift's author what Don Quixote is to Sancho and Hudibras to Ralph. He is an enthusiast without judgment but without assumption. He is all that he pretends to be; he possesses what he misapplies. Swift's author is three parts charlatan. Deprive Martin of his learning and he becomes the picture of Swift's author; give Swift's author learning and he becomes the picture of Martin. To this satire, which found perhaps its models in *Don Quixote* and the *History of Mr. Oufflé*, each Scriblerian was to contribute a portion. Pope, Gay, and Parnell undertook to depict Martin in his relation to polite letters, Arbuthnot in his relation to science, and Swift in his relation to the world. Whether Atterbury and Congreve had any share in the design we have now no means of knowing. The work was unfortunately never completed. What remains of it first appeared in the

Miscellanies published by Pope between 1727 and 1732, and in the quarto edition of Pope's Prose Works published in 1741. The exquisitely humorous memoir of Martin, which furnished Sterne with a model for Mr. Shandy, and Lord Lytton with a model for Mr. Caxton, was written mainly if not entirely by Arbuthnot. To Pope, assisted perhaps by Gay and Swift, we owe the amusing parody on the *De Sublimitate*, the *Treatise on the Bathos*. In the *Virgilius Restitutus* attributed also to them, it is not unlikely that Atterbury had a hand. It is among the very best things produced by the Scriblerians, and is indeed inimitable. The pleasant parody of Bishop Burnet's *History of his Own Time*, the *Memoirs of P. P., Clerk of this Parish*, was the joint production of Pope and Gay. The *Annus Mirabilis*, a vapid and feeble compound of dulness and indecency, may be assigned with some confidence to Arbuthnot. The specimen of *Scriblerus's Reports, Stralling versus Stiles*, was written by Pope with the assistance of Fortescue. To Pope, Arbuthnot and Parnell, so Spence tells us, we owe the *Essay on the Origin of the Sciences*. Such are the pieces which represent all that remains of a work which might have been monumental.

III

More than two years had yet to elapse before the war with France was finally terminated. During the whole of this time the storms of faction raged without intermission. The Whigs, conscious that they were fighting a losing battle, fought with the fury of despair. The Tories, thwarted and on their mettle,

fought with like passion for victory. De Foe gives us a terrible picture of the state of England at this crisis. 'We fight,' he says, 'not like men but like devils, like furies; we fight not as if we would kill one another only, but as if we would tear one another's soul out of our bodies; we fight with all the addition of personal envy, revenge, hellish rage, irreconcilable, implacable malice. Nor do we fight with cudgels only, as at Marlow, Whitechurch, &c., with swords and staves, as at Coventry, but we fight with the poison of the tongue, the venom of slander, the foam of malice and the poison of reproach.'¹ Few elections passed without bloodshed, and it was only with imminent peril to limb and even to life that a man could push his way through the yelling savages who surrounded the hustings, to record his vote. An attempt was made to assassinate Prince Eugene. Two attempts were made to assassinate Harley, and anonymous threats of assassination were frequently conveyed to him through the post.² It is a remarkable proof of the panic in which men who were prominently connected with politics lived, that when Swift received a present of oranges directed to him in an unknown hand he refused to touch them, for fear that they might have been poisoned.

Nine days after the publication of the *Conduct of the Allies* Parliament met. Marlborough had arrived in London, and the Whigs prepared to make a tremendous effort to defeat the Government. They could hardly expect victory in the Commons, where the majority against them was very large. But they

¹ *Review*, vii. 335-337.

² *Journal to Stella*, Nov. 14, 1711. *Id.*

had reason to hope that a motion against the Peace might be carried by the Lords. Harley had recently made an enemy of one of the most influential men of his own party, the Earl of Nottingham. Nottingham, who had been passed over in all the recent nominations, had expected to succeed Rochester as Lord President, but Harley fearing his extreme views had not invited him to take office. Nottingham, determining to avenge himself for this slight, prepared to make terms with the Whigs. His heart had long been set on passing the Bill against Occasional Conformity, but the opposition of the Whigs had over and over again prevented the Bill from becoming law. He had now the opportunity of gratifying his pique, and of attaining a cherished object. If the Whigs would consent to withdraw their opposition to the Bill, he was willing, he said, to introduce a motion against the Peace. The bargain was struck. Parliament assembled. In the Speech from the Throne it was announced that time and place had been appointed for opening the treaty of general peace, 'notwithstanding the arts of those who delight in war.' Then Nottingham rose, and, after denouncing the proposed peace as derogatory and mischievous, concluded by moving 'that no peace could be safe or honourable to Great Britain or Europe if Spain and the West Indies were allotted to any branch of the House of Bourbon.' A long and intemperate debate followed; Nottingham was supported by the whole strength of the Whig party, and the motion was carried by 62 votes against 54. This crushing blow was succeeded by an omen of equally disastrous import. No one at this time stood so high in the

Queen's favour as the Duchess of Somerset, and the Duke of Somerset had been the loudest and most vehement of those who had supported Nottingham. The Queen had been present during the debate, and on leaving the House surprised everyone by giving her hand to the Duke of Somerset to escort her to her carriage. This was naturally interpreted as indicating that her sympathies were not with the advocates for peace but with the war party, especially when it was known that she had refused the proffered escort of the Lord Chamberlain. The Whigs were now confident of victory, the Tories in despair. Swift believed that all was lost. 'I look upon the Ministry,' he wrote to Stella, 'as certainly ruined.' Prior was of opinion that the Government would resign in a week.

But the crisis was not so formidable as the Tories in their panic thought. The pen of Swift had done its work. If in Parliamentary circles the spirit of party was proof against reason and ridicule, the world outside these circles was not. To that world he had appealed in the *Conduct of the Allies*, and to that world he now prepared again to appeal. During the next fourteen months his pen was scarcely ever idle, now gibbeting, in lampoons and Grub Street ballads, obnoxious individuals, now explaining and defending in elaborate pamphlets the policy and measures of the Ministry, now assailing in almost every form which satire and argument can assume the aims, the tactics, the characters of the Opposition.

His warfare was systematic. He began by attempting to turn into ridicule those who had been most prominent in supporting the motion against

peace. His first victim was Nottingham, who was so stung by the ludicrous ballad in which his infirmities were exposed that he had the printer arrested. Next he assailed, in the lampoon which is said to have cost him a bishopric, the Duchess of Somerset. Marlborough, who had just been deprived of all his offices, came third, and when we read the *Fable of Midas* we shall not suspect the Duke's sincerity when he said 'that there was nothing he desired so much as to contrive some way to soften Dr. Swift.'¹ He now proceeded to more serious work. The great obstacle in the way of the Peace—the measure on which the existence of the Ministry depended—was the Allies, and in the exposure of their unwarrantable demands, and of the calamities in which, for their own aggrandisement, they were involving England, lay, as the impression made by his former tract had shown, the argument most likely to be of service to his party. He determined therefore to follow up the *Conduct of the Allies*, which had been an attack on them generally, by a particular attack on the Dutch. No point had been urged with more emphasis by the opponents of the Peace, both within Parliament and without, than the obligations imposed on us by the Barrier Treaty. By this absurd treaty, which even Marlborough had had the sagacity to oppose,² England had, in addition to other provisions, bound herself to place Holland not only in possession of the most important cities in the Spanish Netherlands then³ conquered, but of

¹ Recorded with much complacency by Swift, *Journal to Stella*, Jan. 8, 1712.

² Marlborough to the Duchess, Aug. 19, and to Godolphin, Aug. 26. Coxe, *Life of Marl.* iv. 413-14.

³ October 1709.

every town which should in the course of the war be conquered from France, stipulating also to guarantee the possession of these cities to the Dutch, and engaging to come with an adequate force to their defence, should the enemy attack them. In return for these immense concessions, Holland was to guarantee the Protestant succession in England.

Nothing could exceed the skill with which the *Remarks on the Barrier Treaty* is composed. It well deserves to be studied by all who would understand the power of simplicity as an artifice of rhetoric. We rise from its perusal persuaded and convinced, glowing with indignation, as in sympathy with some invective, settled and resolute, as in accordance with irresistible argument. And yet it appears to consist of little more than the plain statement of plain facts, so obvious as to appear self-evident. But analyse it and the art is apparent—it is the art of which Demosthenes was so consummate a master.

But it was not the Allies and Whigs alone who were embarrassing the Ministry. Harley was regarded with disfavour by certain malcontents among his own supporters, and Swift never did his patron more service than in the tract entitled *Some Advice to the October Club*. The October Club was a clique of country gentlemen and Members of Parliament who belonged to the extreme section of the Tory party, and who, having long expressed dissatisfaction with their chief, were now assuming a very menacing attitude. Constitutionally cautious and moderate, dilatory also, and with the fortunes of his party so often on the razor's edge, Harley had always preferred a trimming to a decided policy. He never entirely trusted the

Tories; he cherished to the last a hope of coalition with the Whigs.¹ To his procrastination, indecision, and half-heartedness his party attributed, and no doubt justly, the recent defeat in the debate on the Peace. That disaster had for a moment roused him to take, or at least to allow his colleague St. John to take, decisive measures.

The simultaneous creation of twelve peers had turned the Tory minority in the House of Lords into a majority. The dismissal of the Duke of Somerset, the disgrace of Marlborough, the incarceration of Walpole, and the expedition with which the Treaty with France was progressing, had indeed delighted the Club. But they were not satisfied. What had been begun, they said, should be completed. A clean sweep ought to be made of the Whigs from all places of post and power; there should be no more compromise, no more half measures. To pacify and if possible to gain the confidence of these malcontents was at this moment of more urgent importance than anything else. But how to do so without at the same time making concessions which it was of almost equal importance not to make was a problem by no means easy to solve. It was solved by Swift in a pamphlet which Scott justly calls a masterpiece of political tact. The *Letter to the October Club* is perhaps the best

¹ It was no doubt impossible for Harley, even had he been so inclined, to adopt any other policy, for it was the policy which the Queen, who equally distrusted the Tories, had made up her mind to adopt. 'She had,' says Swift, 'entertained the notion of forming a moderate comprehensive scheme, which she maintained with great firmness, nor would ever depart from until half a year before her death.' *Enquiry into the Behaviour of the Queen's Last Ministry*. See, too, *Journal to Stella*, *passim*.

example to be found in Swift's writings of the rare skill with which he could perform the nicest offices of diplomacy. He regarded it himself with much satisfaction. It was one of the few works with which he confessed that he was pleased. The *Letter to the October Club* was succeeded by a very powerful tract, the *Letter to a Whig Lord*. This lord is said, though on doubtful evidence, to have been Lord Ashburnham. Originally a Whig, he had joined the Tories. He was now fluctuating, and it was feared that he would again go over to the Whigs. But, if the pamphlet is ostensibly addressed to an individual, it is really addressed to that large class of whom a man in the position of Ashburnham may be regarded as typical. It is an appeal to the waverers. Its design is to confirm the Tories in their allegiance to their chief, and to make converts of the doubtful Whigs. Artfully arguing that there is nothing incompatible between the principles and interests of the moderate Tories and those of the moderate Whigs, he proceeds to show that what separates the two parties is simply the dispute 'between those who would support and those who would violate the royal prerogative'; that what were in question were not measures but men, not principles but factious brangles. 'There is no opinion properly belonging to you as a Whig wherein you may not still continue and yet deserve the favour and continuance of the Court, provided you offer nothing in violation of the royal prerogative, nor take the advantage in critical junctures to bring difficulties upon the administration, with no other view but that of putting the Queen under the necessity of changing it.' But the object of the tract was not merely to

confirm the waverers; it is in effect an elaborate defence and justification of Harley's policy of compromise. It was probably written at his suggestion, and there is a sentence in it which looks very like an interpolation. If Swift promised that 'the ministers will second your utmost zeal for securing the indulgence to Protestant dissenters,' it must have been with a wry face.

Side by side with these pamphlets he was keeping up an incessant fire of squibs and broadsides, sometimes in verse and sometimes in prose, pelting Marlborough when he left England, and Prince Eugene when he came to England. Raking into the scandals of private life and noting all that passed in public, he kept a vigilant eye for every incident that could be turned to account against the Whigs. No man was probably ever so much feared. For neither age, rank, nor sex afforded any protection from his bitter and often filthy raillery. Some of these lampoons find a place in his collected writings. But the greater portion of them have certainly escaped the diligence of his editors, and lurk unidentified among the broadsheets preserved in the British Museum. It would be easy to point to many in these collections which bear his sign manual. What is certain is that he was engaged, as we know from his correspondence, on pieces of which in his republished works not a vestige remains.

Incessant as these occupations were, they did not exhaust his extraordinary energy. Towards the end of 1712 he commenced his *History of the Peace of Utrecht*, which appeared many years afterwards, when completed, under the title of the *History of the Four Last Years of the Queen*. He had vindicated the

policy and conduct of the Ministry in these ephemeral publications, which were for the purposes of the moment addressed to his political contemporaries, and he was now anxious to vindicate them as a historian to the world generally and to posterity. He had access to documents and correspondence of the most secret kind. The manuscript was submitted to Harley, who corrected portions of it with his own hand. Swift frequently speaks in the *Journal to Stella* of the pains he took with its composition, and we learn from the same source that it was completed on May 16, 1713.

Seven weeks before he had put the finishing touches to his work, that other work for the furtherance of which he had toiled so much and had toiled so long had at last been accomplished. His party had triumphed; the Peace of Utrecht had been signed.

IV

If the measure of a man's importance be the measure of the influence he exercises on contemporaries, it would be no exaggeration to say that, in the spring of 1713, no Commoner in England stood so high as Swift. He dictated the political opinions of half the nation. He had turned the tide of popularity against the Whigs. He had done more than any single man then living to confound the designs of Austria and Holland, to crush Marlborough, to paralyse Marlborough's coadjutors.¹ A war, splendid

¹ 'This day se'ennight, after I had been talking at Court with Sir William Wyndham, the Spanish Ambassador came up to him, and said he heard that was Dr. Swift, and desired him to tell me that

beyond parallel, he had rendered odious. At two perilous junctures he had saved the Ministry. For every step in the negotiations with France, for every measure in the domestic policy of Oxford, he had paved the way. He had indeed done more for his party, and for the leaders of his party, than any man of letters had ever done for any patron or for any cause. And what he had done he had done gratuitously.¹ 'I never,' he says, 'received one shilling from the Ministers, or any other present except that of a few books, nor did I want this assistance to support me.'² All this had been acknowledged in terms flattering even to fulsomeness. Nothing therefore was more natural than that he should expect some substantial mark of ministerial favour. That he expected preferment though he never solicited it,³ and that Harley and St. John were perfectly aware of the tacit contract into which by accepting his services they had entered, is abundantly clear from the *Journal to Stella*. He was neither impatient nor unreasonable. It is not until May 1711 that he begins to

his master, and the King of France, and the Queen, were more obliged to me than any man in Europe.'—*Journal to Stella*, Dec. 21, 1712.

¹ It is remarkable that Swift, though he was one of the most voluminous and popular writers of his age, never troubled himself to negotiate with publishers. 'I never got a farthing for anything I writ,' he says in a letter to Pulteney, dated May, 1735, 'except once, about eight years ago, and that by Mr. Pope's prudent management for me'—a fact which Jeffrey, when taxing him with sordid avarice, found it convenient to suppress.

² *History of the Four Last Years, &c.* Preface.

³ His reasons for not doing so he characteristically explains in a letter to Archbishop King, Oct. 1, 1711. *Works* (Scott), xv. 445-6. See, too, King's letter, earnestly urging him to conquer his mischievous pride. *Id.* pp. 451-2.

express dissatisfaction. 'To return,' he writes, 'without some mark of distinction would look extremely little, and I would likewise gladly be somewhat richer than I am. Everything here is tasteless to me for want of being where I would be. And so a short sigh and no more of this.' And no more of this there is for another year. Then expressions of querulousness and discontent become frequent. 'Less of civility and more of interest,' he adds bitterly, after telling Stella that the Lord Treasurer had chidden him for not having visited him for three days. 'Ministers,' he observes on another occasion, 'never do anything for the companions of their pleasures.' His first great disappointment was the deanery of Wells, which was vacated in the spring of 1712, and which everyone expected would have been conferred on him. In November the death of Dr. Humphrey Humphreys left the See of Hereford vacant. For a moment it seemed not unlikely that Swift would be selected to fill it. There is reason to believe that he was strongly recommended to the Queen. But the Queen, whose natural dislike to him is said to have been sharpened by the Archbishop of York and by the Duchess of Somerset, whom, as we have seen, he had grossly libelled, turned a deaf ear to the recommendations of her Ministers.¹ She probably thought, as a pious and sensible woman might reasonably think, that the

¹ This story is contradicted by King, who was informed by Bolingbroke that the Queen had herself assured him that she 'had never received any unfavourable character of Swift, nor had the Archbishop or any other person endeavoured to lessen him in her esteem.' And Bolingbroke added that it was a story invented by Oxford to deceive Swift and make him contented with his deanery in Ireland.—King's *Anecdotes*, pp. 60-61.

author of such a treatise as the *Tale of a Tub*, and of such verses as the *Windsor Prophecy*, was scarcely the man for a place among the Fathers of the Church. This feeling appears to have been understood and respected by Swift himself, for, though he was well aware that Anne had been the only obstacle between himself and the prize he most coveted, it is remarkable that in speaking of her—and he often has occasion to speak of her—he never betrays the smallest ill-will or vindictiveness. Other disappointments followed. ‘This morning’ (April 13, 1713), he wrote to Stella, ‘my friend Mr. Lewis came to me and showed me an order for three deaneries, but none of them for me.’ And now he lost all patience. ‘Tell the Lord Treasurer,’ he said, ‘that I take nothing ill of him but his not giving me timely notice, as he promised to do, that the Queen would do nothing for me.’ Oxford, no doubt as mortified as himself, hearing that he was in the Under Secretary’s office, came in to see him. In the course of a long conversation Swift plainly told him that unless he had ‘something honourable’ immediately conferred on him he should at once leave for Ireland. Oxford, without informing Swift at the time, stopped the warrants, and they both dined that night at the Duke of Ormond’s. The object of this visit appears to have been to induce Ormond to exercise his influence in persuading the Queen to confer the vacant See of Dromore on Sterne, then Dean of St. Patrick’s, Dublin. This would leave the deanery, which was in the gift of Ormond, open, and it was hoped that the Queen would allow Ormond to confer it on Swift. But preferment at the price of exile from all that made life,

as he said, tolerable to him, was by no means to his mind or to the mind of his friends. Oxford, not yet in despair of the Queen's conversion, still kept back the warrants. Lady Masham, who on hearing of the proposed arrangement burst into tears, had an interview with the Queen. Then Oxford, who saw that higher preferment in England was, in the Queen's present mood, out of the question, suggested as a last resource that a prebendaryship at Windsor, which then happened to be vacant, should be conferred on his friend. But the Queen was inexorable. It should be the deanery of St. Patrick's or nothing. Meanwhile even this had become uncertain and appeared to be eluding him. Ormond had changed his mind and refused to consent to Sterne's promotion. Sterne had, he said, not treated him with respect, and he disliked Sterne, and Sterne was under the influence of the Archbishop of Dublin. He desired Swift, therefore, to name some other deanery. 'I desire,' replied Swift, with quiet dignity, 'that your Grace will put me out of the case, and do as you please.' Ormond was a gentleman and, though irascible, a kind-hearted man. He probably read in a moment the full meaning of what Swift had said, and perhaps a glance at the face of the speaker assisted the interpretation. He replied with great kindness, 'I will consent,' adding that he would not have done so for any other man alive. How inexpressibly galling all this must have been to a man of Swift's temper may well be imagined. He had not only the humiliation of feeling that what he ought to have owed to simple desert he had owed to extorted favour, but that, in securing a prize which it was almost an indignity to accept, he

had secured for another—and that an inferior—the prize which he himself most coveted.

Under these mortifying circumstances, he accepted what he was not in a position to refuse, and, swallowing his chagrin, set out early in June for Ireland. His reception in Dublin was not calculated to raise his spirits. He was grossly insulted as he passed along the streets, and on the morning of his installation a copy of verses, which is still extant,¹ taunting him with apostasy and infidelity, is said to have been posted on the door of the cathedral.

In a few weeks he was again in London. He had been summoned to mediate, as he had so often done before, between Oxford and Bolingbroke, whose inter-necine feuds were now causing grave alarm. He soon found, however, that the differences between them were not such as admitted either of reconciliation or of compromise; for who can reconcile rivals, or who negotiate compromise when the struggle is for supremacy? But what it was possible to do he did, and his correspondence amply shows that he acted at this unhappy crisis in a manner that reflects the highest credit both on his heart and on his judgment.

Meanwhile he had not permitted those terrible weapons which had already done so much execution among the Whigs to rust in idleness. Of all the Whig journalists, none were at that moment carrying scurrility and intemperance to greater length than Richard Steele. In an evil hour he had abandoned literature for politics, had dropped the *Spectator* to set up the *Guardian*, and had recently entered Parliament.

¹ Printed in Monck Mason's *Annals of St. Patrick's Cathedral*, p. 269.

Between Swift and himself there had existed for some years cordial friendship, a friendship which political differences had subsequently cooled, but which both had been, even in the heat of controversy, careful to respect. To Swift he was under great obligations. At Swift's intercession he had been permitted to retain a lucrative office under Government. He had been assisted by him in his literary ventures; he had on more than one occasion been protected by him from slander and insult. But, shortly before Swift's departure from Ireland, Steele, now drunk with party spirit, had so far forgotten himself as to insert in the *Guardian* a coarse and ungenerous reflection on his old friend. Upon that, Swift sought through Addison an explanation. Steele's reply was pert and rude. Swift, in spite of this double provocation, displayed at first singular forbearance. Nothing indeed could be more dignified and becoming than his conduct at the beginning of this rupture. A reference to the correspondence which passed between the two men will show how greatly Mr. Forster has, in his *Essay on Steele*, misrepresented the facts. The letters of Swift are those of a man calm, just, and candid. The letters of Steele are those of a blustering egotist, who, without reason himself, will listen to reason in nobody else. Swift was, however, seldom insulted with impunity. The castigation which Steele now received was due no doubt immediately to his prominence as a party writer, but it is easy to see that private animosity glows in every paragraph of that cruel pamphlet—*The Importance of the 'Guardian' Considered*¹—in which the

¹ *Works* (Scott), iv. p. 869

Member for Stockbridge was held up to the mockery of his constituents.

While busy with Steele, he was busy also with Burnet. That turbulent prelate, who was on the point of bringing out the third volume of his *History of the Reformation*, had, with the double object of whetting public curiosity and of gratifying his own absurd vanity, published by anticipation the *Preface*. In this he had taken occasion to taunt the Tories with Jacobitism and Popery. Swift's reply, which assumed the form partly of a parody, and partly of a running commentary of a parody on the Bishop's *Preface*, is one of the most amusing, as it is assuredly one of the most severe, of his polemical pieces. He had long suspected, he said, that Steele and the Bishop were working in co-operation, for, 'though that peculiar manner of expressing themselves which the poverty of our language forces us to call their style' presented points of difference, their notions were precisely similar. 'But I will confess,' he goes on to say, 'that my suspicions did not carry me so far as to conjecture that this venerable champion would be in such mighty haste to come into the field and serve in the quality of an *enfant perdu*, armed only with a pocket pistol before his great blunderbuss could be got ready, his old rusty breastplate scoured, and his cracked head-piece mended.' But the whole pamphlet is inimitable. Its irony, its humour, its drollery, are delicious.

And now the country was tossing under the storms which shook the last year of Anne. The Whigs taunted the Tories with designing to bring in the Pretender, and the Tories taunted the Whigs with treachery to the Throne and the Constitution. In the

spring of 1714 appeared Steele's *Crisis*. Swift, whose wrath against Steele had been sharpened by their recent controversy, at once replied to it in the *Public Spirit of the Whigs*. Nothing which ever came from his pen appears to have exasperated his opponents so much as this tract. The attention of the Legislature was directed to it. The Scotch Peers, with the Duke of Argyle at their head, complained personally to the Queen. The bookseller and the printer were arrested. A proclamation offering a reward of three hundred pounds to any one who would reveal the author was issued. Swift, with the fate of Tutchin and De Foe before his eyes, became alarmed and meditated flight. But the tact of Oxford averted discovery, and the danger blew over.

The catastrophe which he had long feared was, however, fast approaching. The feud between Oxford and Bolingbroke was about to terminate in the ruin of both. In May he met his two friends for the last time under the same roof, and he made a final effort to recall them to reason and duty. He pleaded, he argued; but expostulation, warning, counsel, were vain. He now saw clearly that all was over. 'I can no longer,' he sighed, 'do service in the ship, and am able to get out of it. I have gone through my share of malice and danger, and will be as quiet the rest of my days as I can. So much for politics;'¹ and he had hurried away sick at heart to hide his sorrow and chagrin at Letcombe. Two troubled months passed by. Though he was out of the world, numerous correspondents kept him fully informed of all that occurred. Each step in the rapid decline of Oxford, each step in

¹ Letter to Walls, Mr. Murray's MSS., quoted by Mr. Craik.

the fallacious triumph of Bolingbroke, was at once communicated to him. Indeed, his correspondence at this period forms the best account extant of the momentous weeks which preceded the death of Anne.¹

The history of that crisis reflects indelible infamy on the leaders of Swift's party; it is pleasing to add that the conduct of Swift himself may be regarded with unalloyed satisfaction. When political immorality, in the worst type it can assume, was epidemic among the statesmen of his faction, his patriotism and integrity remained without taint. It is certain that he had no share in the intrigues with James. It is certain that he resolutely opposed all attempts to tamper with the Act of Settlement. He expressed with great courage his disapprobation both of the conduct of Oxford and of the conduct of Bolingbroke, and he sought in a powerful pamphlet—one of the very best he ever wrote—to repair the mischief which their quarrels had inflicted on the common cause. But the manuscript unfortunately found its way into the hands of Bolingbroke, who, having his own purposes to serve, made in it certain alterations which were more calculated to benefit himself than his party; and Swift, justly annoyed, withdrew it from publication. Had this pamphlet, *Free Thoughts upon the present State of Affairs*, appeared a few weeks earlier, and had the policy prescribed in it been carried out,

¹ See in addition to the letters dated in these months, *Swift* (Scott), vol. xvi.; the letter to the Earl of Oxford, dated June 14, 1737 (Scott), xix. p. 158; and the *Inquiry into the Behaviour of the Queen's Last Ministry*. This appears to have been designed as a supplement to the *History of the Four Last Years*, and the two are probably fragments of Swift's design to write a history of the reign, abandoned when he failed to obtain the Royal Historiographership.

the ruin of the Tories would in all probability have been averted. What Swift plainly foresaw was that the Whigs, availing themselves of the dissensions among the Tories, and identifying the Tories as a party with the Jacobites, would, as a party, bring over the Elector and carry out the Act of Settlement. He proposed therefore to cut the ground from under the Whigs by abolishing party distinctions, or rather by enlarging the definition of what constituted a Tory, and by narrowing the definition of what constituted a Whig. There were, he says, two points on which 'a very large majority of the kingdom appear perfectly hearty and unanimous'; the first was loyalty to the Church of England, the other was the security of the Protestant Succession in the House of Hanover; and in this party he recognises the Tories. The other party, which he speaks of as 'the faction,' consisted of a confederacy of the open and secret enemies of the Church, of moderation men and of republicans; and in this party he recognises the Whigs. Frankly attributing the disorganisation and anarchy of the Tories to the ill-management and mutual dissensions of Oxford and Bolingbroke, he points out that it is not too late to retrieve the past. Let them rally round them that 'very large majority,' the friends of the Church and the friends of the Protestant Succession; let there be no truce, no compromise, with 'the faction,' which should be excluded from all civil and military posts; let the army, and especially the Guards, be under the closest surveillance; let them spare no pains to counteract the slanders of their enemies at Herrenhausen, and to reconcile themselves and their party with the Elector. Had Swift known what we know

now, how deeply both Oxford and Bolingbroke were implicated with the Pretender, he would not perhaps have been surprised that his admonitions carried so little weight. On July 27 Oxford resigned, and the reins of government were in the hands of Bolingbroke.

Nothing we know of Swift is more honourable to him than his behaviour at this juncture. Of his two friends, the one was at the summit of political greatness, the other was not merely under a cloud, but ruined beyond possibility of redemption. Both sought his presence. Bolingbroke, inviting him with eager importunity to share his triumph, held out hopes at once the most splendid and the most plausible. He would undertake, he said, to reconcile him with the Duchess of Somerset, he would introduce him to the Queen, he would provide and provide amply for him in the English Church. Oxford, pathetically appealing to ancient friendship, had nothing to offer him but the opportunity of proving that that friendship had been sincere and disinterested. Without a moment's hesitation Swift chose the nobler course.

As he was on the point of setting out for Oxford's country seat, he received a letter announcing the death of Anne. It was an event which for some days had been almost hourly expected, but its effect on the Tories was the effect of sudden and unforeseen calamity. It found them without resources, without fixed plans, in the midst of internecine strife. Bolingbroke indeed continued to bluster about the miracles which a little judicious management could still effect, assured him that the Tories were not in despair, and that the cry in a month might be that the Whigs

were a pack of Jacobites. And he hoped, he said, that his old friend would lose no time in assisting him 'to save the Constitution.' To this fustian Swift replied in a letter¹ written with great calmness, dignity, and good sense. He dwelt sadly on the efforts he had made to save from self-destruction the friends who had been so dear to him, and he spoke with some bitterness of the folly and infatuation which had made those efforts nugatory. In the present condition of affairs he was, he continued, unable to discern any favourable symptom. The wreck of the Tories was complete. All that remained for Bolingbroke to do was to maintain his post at the head of the Church party. 'You are,' he went on to say, 'still in the prime of life. You have sustained, it is true, a heavy defeat, but you will no doubt learn, like a prudent general, to profit from disaster.' He added in conclusion that he had a lively sense of the favours which his patron had purposed to confer on him, that he hoped before the end of the year to be again at his side, but that for the present he must, he feared, take leave of a scene which would, however, seldom be absent from his thoughts. And he took leave of that scene for ever. By the middle of August he was again in Dublin.

From this moment the biography of Swift assumes a new complexion. During the last few years circumstances had, in a manner, enabled him to escape from himself. Incessant activity had left him little time for gloomy reflection. If he was not among the Fathers of the Church, the position which he most coveted he had attained. His genius and force of

¹ Dated August 7, 1714 (Scott, xvi. p. 212).

character had extorted from society the homage which society is as a rule slow to pay to any but the opulent and noble. In literary circles his pre-eminence was acknowledged. On politics the influence which he had exercised had been without parallel in the history of private men. Now all was changed. He found himself suddenly reduced to obscurity and impotence. He was no longer the confidant of great ministers, the companion of ambassadors and privy councillors, the pet of fine ladies, and the boon comrade of wits and poets. He was an exile, and an exile with little to do and with nothing to hope, in a place which was of all places in the world the most odious to him. The only society with which he could mingle was the society of inferiors. What followed, followed naturally. He became the prey of that constitutional melancholy which had been his bane from childhood. The fierce and gloomy passions, which prosperous activity had for a while composed, again awoke. Each month as it passed by added to his irritation and wretchedness. Ill-health, the loss of friends, his own unpopularity, and, above all, the condition of the unhappy country in which his lot was cast, alternately maddened and depressed him.

CHAPTER VI

SWIFT IN IRELAND, 1714-1720

I

THE circumstances under which he entered on his new duties were sufficiently inauspicious. It was well known that he had been one of the chief supporters of the last Ministry, and that his preferment had been the price of his services. In Dublin, where the Whigs were as three to one, the downfall of the Tories had been hailed with savage glee. Indeed, of all the sects into which Irish politicians were divided and subdivided, it may be questioned whether there was one which regarded with much favour the party to which Swift had attached himself. The victory gained by the Whigs was celebrated as such victories always were celebrated. On Swift's head broke in full force the storm of obloquy which was overwhelming his friends in England. Libels taunting him with Popery and Jacobitism freely circulated among the vulgar. He was hustled and pelted in the street. One miscreant, an Irish nobleman, assaulted him with such ferocious violence that he presented a petition, which is still extant, appealing for protection to the House of Peers. For some months he went in fear of his life, and he never ventured to show himself even in the principal thoroughfares without an escort of armed

servants. And these were not his only troubles. He was on bad terms with his Chapter ; he was on bad terms with the Archbishop. He was in debt to his predecessor for the deanery house. He was in wretched health, and in still more wretched spirits. His feelings found vent in a copy of verses, which are inexpressibly sad and touching.

Why should I repine
 To see my life so fast decline ?
 But why obscurely here alone,
 Where I am neither lov'd nor known ?
 My state of health none care to learn,
 My life is here no soul's concern,
 And those with whom I now converse
 Without a tear will tend my hearse.
 Remov'd from kind Arbuthnot's aid,
 Who knows his art but not his trade,
 Some formal visits, looks and words,
 Which mere humanity affords.

My life is now a burden grown
 To others, ere it be my own,
 Ye formal weepers for the sick,
 In your last offices be quick.¹

Meanwhile, evil tidings were arriving by every post from England. First came the news of the flight of Bolingbroke ; then came the news of the impeachment and imprisonment of Oxford ; and lastly, the still more incredible intelligence that Ormond had declared for the Pretender, and was in France. Under these stunning blows Swift acted as none but men on whom Nature has been lavish of heroic qualities are capable of acting. It was now plain that all who had been in the confidence of the late Ministry were in great danger, and that, unless they

¹ *Works*, x. p. 414.

were prepared to fare as their leaders had fared, it behoved them to walk warily. A vindictive faction in the flush of triumph is, as Swift well knew, in no mood for nice distinctions between guilt presumptive and guilt established. He was, moreover, well aware that rumour had already been busy with his name, and that his enemies were watching with malignant vigilance for anything which he might do or say to compromise himself. But all this was as nothing. Neither self-interest nor fear had any influence on his loyal and dauntless spirit. He wrote off to Oxford, not merely expressing his sympathy, but imploring permission to attend him in the Tower. 'It is the first time,' he said, 'that I ever solicited you in my own behalf, and if I am refused, it will be the first request you ever refused me.'¹ He braved the suspicions, nay more, the peril, to which a confidential correspondence with the families of Bolingbroke and Ormond, when the one had become the Secretary and the other the chief General of the Pretender, exposed him. We are told that, when the Ulster King-of-Arms attempted, on the attainder of the Duke, to remove the escutcheons of the Ormonds, which hung in St. Patrick's Cathedral, Swift sternly bade him begone, 'for as long as I am Dean,' he thundered out, 'I will never permit so gross an indignity to be offered to so noble a house.' It was not likely that he could act thus with impunity, and it appears from a letter of Archbishop King, dated May, 1715, and from one of his own letters to Atterbury, dated April, 1716, that he was twice in danger of arrest.

His conduct at this crisis was the more honourable

¹ Letter dated July 19, 1715. *Scott's Swift*, xvi. p. 260.

to him as it sprang solely from the purest of motives, from a chivalrous sense of what is due to friends and benefactors, and especially to friends and benefactors in misfortune. Some writers have, it is true, imputed his conduct, as hostile contemporaries imputed it, to less worthy motives. But it would be mere waste of words to discuss their statements. Nothing we know of Swift is more absolutely certain than the fact that, so far from having any sympathy with the Pretender, he always regarded him with peculiar abhorrence. He denounced him in his correspondence, he denounced him in his conversation, he denounced him in his public writings. 'I always professed,' he says in one of his familiar letters, 'to be against the Pretender, because I look upon his coming as a greater evil than we are likely to suffer under the worst Whig Government that can be found.' In the crisis of 1714, when it is not perhaps too much to say that his pen might have turned the scale in James's favour, he was among the most acrimonious and vehement of anti-Jacobites.¹ Indeed, his feelings on this subject were so well known that both Oxford and Bolingbroke studiously concealed from him their negotiations with St. Germain's, and, as his *Historical Memoirs* show, he had never even a suspicion of the intrigues the existence of which the *Stuart Papers* have in our time placed beyond doubt.²

¹ See his remarks about the Pretender in his *Free Thoughts on the present State of Affairs*.

² To the end of his life Swift contended that there was no design on the part of Anne's last Ministry to bring in the Pretender; how effectually Harley and Bolingbroke had concealed their intrigues from him is clear from the Dean's letter to the Archbishop of Dublin, Dec. 16, 1716. 'Had there been even the least overture or intent of

His pen, meanwhile, was not idle. In his letter to Oxford he had promised that, though the rage of faction had rendered contemporaries deaf and blind, future ages should at all events know the truth. With this view he drew up the *Memoirs relating to that Change which happened in the Queen's Ministry in the Year 1710*, a pamphlet in which, in a clear and temperate narrative, he explains the circumstances under which he had himself first engaged in politics, as well as the revolution which brought his party into power. On the completion of the *Memoirs*—they are dated on the manuscript October, 1714—he began the *Enquiry into the Behaviour of the Queen's Last Ministry*. This is a work of great interest and value. With a firm and impartial hand he traces the history of those fatal feuds which had cost himself and his friends so dear. He makes no attempt—and it is greatly to his honour—to palliate what was reprehensible in his own party; he makes no attempt to exaggerate what was reprehensible in their opponents. The prejudice of friendship is discernible perhaps in the portraits of Oxford, Bolingbroke, and Ormond, but it is a prejudice which extends no further than their personal characters. As public men, no more is assigned to them than is their due. They are as freely censured as their neighbours. Indeed, the

bringing in the Pretender, I think I must have been very stupid not to have picked out some discoveries or suspicions. And although I am not sure that I should have turned informer, yet I am certain I should have dropped some general cautions *and immediately have retired.* See, too, in the second part of the *Enquiry into the Behaviour &c.*, where he again repeats more fully and emphatically what he here says in the letter to King (Scott, vi. 48-56, and compare also p. 15).

pamphlet is distinguished throughout by a spirit of candour not to be mistaken.

But his most elaborate contribution to contemporary history was a work which had, as we have seen, been completed¹ before he left London—the work which appears in his collected writings as the *Memoirs of the Last Four Years of the Queen*. It was commenced in 1712 at Windsor, about a year before the Peace with France was signed, and was, in effect, a vindication of the Treaty of Utrecht. Nothing he ever wrote seems to have given him so much satisfaction. He always described it as the best thing he had done, and it is certain that he expended more time and labour on it than he was in the habit of expending on any of his literary compositions. But the work, as it now appears, is so inferior to what might have been expected from Swift's account of it, that it has been sometimes doubted whether what we have is from the Dean's hand.² It was first given to the world under circumstances certainly suspicious. It was not published until thirteen years after his death; it was not printed from the original manuscripts; it was not edited by any member of his

¹ At the end of the published work this note is appended: 'It need hardly be observed that this history was left incomplete by the author'; but in the *Journal to Stella*, May 16, 1713, he says: 'I have just finished my *Treatise*, and must be ten days in correcting it.' The explanation, of course, is that the work under its present title is a misnomer. The portion which Swift completed was the *History of the Treaty of Utrecht*; he no doubt designed to continue it to the end of the reign.

² Macaulay, in some very amusing MS. notes scrawled on the margin of Orrery's *Remarks on Swift*, and preserved in the British Museum, makes short work of the book: 'Wretched stuff; and, I firmly believe, not Swift's.'

family, or by any one having authority from his executors. It was printed by an anonymous editor from a copy surreptitiously taken by an anonymous friend. And yet, surely, we need have no more doubt of its genuineness than we have of the genuineness of *Gulliver's Travels*. One piece of evidence alone is surely conclusive. In 1738 the original manuscript was read by Erasmus Lewis, the second Lord Oxford, and others, in conclave, with a view to discussing the propriety of its publication. Their opinion was that it contained several inaccuracies of statement, and those inaccuracies Lewis, in a letter to Swift—it may be found in Swift's correspondence¹—categorically pointed out. Now a reference to the printed *Memoirs* will show that they contain the identical errors detected by Lewis and his friends in Swift's manuscript. Again, those portions in the manuscript narrative which Lewis describes as most entertaining and instructive are precisely those portions in the printed work which are undoubtedly best entitled to that praise. And, to clamp this evidence, there is in the British Museum an abstract of Swift's original manuscript made in 1742, nearly three years before the Dean's death, by Dr. Birch. A comparison of this abstract with the work as printed in 1758 proves conclusively that the manuscript abstracted by Birch must have been a manuscript of the *History* then first given to the world.² Nor is there anything improbable in the assertion of the editor—one Lucas—that

¹ Scott's *Swift*, xix. 218.

² For this interesting piece of evidence I am indebted to Mr. Craik's *Life of Swift*, Appendix iii. p. 518. It was communicated to him by Mr. Elwin.

he printed the work from a transcript of the original manuscript, for the original manuscript, as we know from Deane Swift, circulated freely among Swift's friends in Dublin. It is certain that Nugent, Dr. William King, and Orrery had perused that manuscript, and that they were alive when the printed work appeared; it is equally certain that none of them expressed any doubt of the genuineness of the printed *Memoirs*, though those *Memoirs* attracted so much attention that they were printed by instalments in the *Gentleman's Magazine*.

Swift's life during these years is reflected very faithfully in his correspondence. It was passed principally in the discharge of his clerical duties, which he performed with punctilious care; in improving the glebe of Laracor; in endeavouring to come to an understanding with the Archbishop on the one hand, and with his rebellious Chapter on the other; and in devising means for escaping from himself, and from the daily annoyances to which his position exposed him. 'I am,' he writes to Bolingbroke, 'forced into the most trifling amusements, to divert the vexation of former thoughts and present objects.' He gardened and sauntered; he turned over the Greek and Roman classics; he bandied nonsense with Sheridan and Esther Johnson; he went through a course of ecclesiastical history; he dabbled in mathematics. 'I live,' he writes to Pope, 'in the corner of a vast unfurnished house: my family consists of a steward, a groom, a helper in the stable, a footman, and an old maid, who are all at board wages, and when I do not dine abroad or make an entertainment, which last is very rare, I eat a mutton-pie and drink half a pint of

wine; my amusements are defending my small dominion against the Archbishop and endeavouring to reduce my rebellious choir. *Perditur hæc inter misero luv.*' Thus much the world saw; thus much he imparted with all the garrulity of Montaigne and Walpole to the friends who exchanged letters with him. But there were troubles—troubles which must at this time have been weighing heavily on his mind—which were little suspected by the world, and from which he never raised the veil even to those who knew him best.

II

Shortly after his arrival in London, in the autumn of 1710, he had renewed his acquaintance with a lady of the name of Vanhomrigh. Her husband, originally a merchant of Amsterdam, but subsequently the holder of lucrative offices under the Government of William III., had died some years before, leaving her in easy circumstances, with a family of two sons and two daughters. Her house was in Bury Street, St. James's, within a few paces of Swift's lodgings. Mrs. Vanhomrigh was fond—indeed, inordinately fond—of society, and, as she was not only well connected and hospitable, but the mother of two charming girls in the bloom of youth, she had no difficulty in gratifying her whim. Among her male guests she could number such distinguished men as Sir Andrew Fountain. Among her female visitors were to be found some of the most attractive and most accomplished young women in England. There appears, indeed, to have been no more pleasant lounge in London than the little drawing-room in Bury Street. This Swift

soon discovered. Within a few months he had come to be regarded almost as a member of the family. He took his coffee there of an afternoon; he dropped in, as the humour took him, to breakfast or dinner; his best gown and his best wig were kept there; and when a friend sent him a flask of choice Florence or a haunch of venison it was shared with his hospitable neighbours. With the young ladies, Miss Hester, who had not yet completed her twentieth year, and Miss Molly, who was a year or two younger, he was a great favourite. No man thought more highly of the moral and intellectual capacities of women than Swift, and nothing gave him so much pleasure as superintending their education. What he had done for Esther Johnson he now aspired to do for the Miss Vanhomrighs, and, as he found his new pupils as eager to receive as he was to impart instruction, he became earnest in his pleasant task. So passed—partly in the innocent frivolities of social gatherings, and partly in the graver intercourse of teacher and pupil—two happy years. But towards the end of 1712 Swift suddenly found, to his great embarrassment, that the elder of the two sisters had conceived a violent passion for him. The unhappy girl, who had, as she well knew, received no encouragement, struggled for a while, with maiden modesty, to conceal her feelings. At this point it would have been well, perhaps, if Swift had devised some means of withdrawing. But he probably judged all women from the standard of Esther Johnson. She, too, had at one time entertained feelings for him which it was not in his power to return; but had, as soon as she saw that reciprocity of passion was hopeless, cheer-

fully accepted friendship for love. There was surely no reason to suppose that Miss Vanhomrigh would not consent to make the same compromise when she was convinced that there was the same necessity. All that was needed was a clear understanding between them. That understanding would, as time went on, be silently arrived at. But he little knew the character of the woman with whom he had to deal. The less her passion was encouraged the more it grew. The more eloquently he dilated on friendship, the more rapturously she declaimed on love. As he pleaded for the mind, she pleaded for the heart. So for some months they continued to play at cross-purposes, each perceiving, and each disregarding, the innuendoes of the other. At last the poor girl could bear her tortures no longer, and, becoming lost to all sense of feminine delicacy, threw herself at Swift's feet.

And now commenced the really culpable part of his conduct. He ought at once to have taken a decisive step. He ought to have seen that there were only two courses open to him: the one was to make her his wife, the other was to take leave of her for ever. Unhappily, he did neither. He merely proceeded to apply particularly what before he had stated generally. He continued to enlarge on the superiority of friendship to love, and he went on to describe the depth and sincerity of the friendship which he had long felt for her; as for her passion—so ran his reasoning—it was a passing whim—an unwelcome intruder into the paradise of purer joys. He could not return it—no true philosopher would; he could offer instead all that made human intercourse most precious—devoted affection, gratitude, respect, esteem.

All this he contrived to convey in such a manner as could not have inflicted a wound even on the most sensitive pride. It was conveyed—perhaps conveyed for the first time—in that exquisitely graceful and original poem which has made the name of Hester Vanhomrigh deathless. She could there read how Venus, provoked by the complaints which were daily reaching her about the degeneracy of the female sex, resolved to retrieve the reputation of that sex; how, with this object, she called into being a matchless maid, who to every feminine virtue united every feminine grace and charm; how, not content with endowing her paragon with all that is proper to woman, the goddess succeeded by a stratagem in inducing Pallas to bestow on her the choicest of the virtues proper to man; how Pallas, angry at being deceived, consoled herself with the reflection that a being so endowed would be little likely to prove obedient to the goddess who had created her; how Vanessa—for such was the peerless creature's name—did not for a while belie the expectations of Pallas, but how at last she was attacked by treacherous Cupid in Wisdom's very stronghold. The flattered girl could then follow in a transparent allegory the whole history of her relation with her friend, sketched so delicately, and at the same time so humorously, that it must have been impossible for her either to take offence or to miss his meaning. How grievously Swift had erred in thus temporising became every day more apparent. It was in vain that he now began to absent himself from Bury Street; in vain that, as she grew more intemperate, he left her letters unanswered; in vain that in his own letters he

showed, in a manner not to be mistaken, that he had no ear for the language of love.

In the summer of 1714 occurred an event which introduced further complications in this unhappy business. Mrs. Vanhomrigh died, leaving her affairs in a very embarrassed state. The daughters, who appear to have been on bad terms with their brother, applied for assistance to Swift; and Swift, who had at this time left London, was thus again forced into intimate relations with Hester. Nor was this all. By the terms of her father's will she had become possessed of some property near Dublin, and Swift learned, to his intense mortification and perplexity, that, as there was now nothing to detain her in England, it was her intention to follow him to Ireland. He at once wrote off, imploring her to be discreet, and pointing out how easily such a relation as theirs might be misinterpreted by censorious people. Dublin, he said, was not a place for any freedom; everything that happened there was known in a week, and everything that was known was exaggerated a hundredfold. 'If,' he added, 'you are in Ireland while I am there, I shall see you very seldom.' But all was of no avail, and a few weeks after his arrival in Dublin Hester and her sister were in lodgings within a stone's throw of the deanery.

Swift's position was now perplexing in the extreme. By every tie but one which can bind man to woman he was bound to Esther Johnson. For more than thirteen years she had been a portion of his life. She had been the partner of his most secret thoughts; she had been his solace in gloom and sorrow; she had been his nurse in sickness. In return for all this she

had claimed neither to bear his name nor to share his fortune; she had been satisfied with his undivided affection. As yet nothing had arisen to disturb their sweet and placid intercourse. Indeed, he had been so careful to abstain from anything which could cause her uneasiness, that in his letters from London he had never even referred to his intimacy with Hester Vanhomrigh; and poor Stella, little suspecting the presence of a rival, was now in the first joy of having her idol again at her side. For awhile he nursed the hope that Miss Vanhomrigh would, on seeing that he absented himself from her society, withdraw from Dublin. He was soon undeceived. The more he left her to herself the more importunate she became. The letters addressed by her at this period to Swift have been preserved, and exhibit a state of mind which it is both terrible and pitiable to contemplate. 'It is impossible,' she writes in one of her letters, 'to describe what I have suffered since I saw you last. I am sure I could have borne the rack much better than those killing, killing words of yours. Sometimes I have resolved to die without seeing you more, but those resolves, to your misfortune, did not last long.' How deeply Swift was affected by all this, and with what tenderness and delicacy he acted under these most trying circumstances, is evident from his reply to this letter:—

I will see you in a day or two, and believe me it goes to my soul not to see you oftener. I will give you the best advice, countenance, and assistance I can. I would have been with you sooner if a thousand impediments had not prevented me. I did not imagine you had been under difficulties. I am sure my whole fortune should go to remove them. I cannot see you to-day, I fear, having affairs of my own place to do, but pray think

it not want of friendship or tenderness, which I will always continue to the utmost.

He did all in his power to recall her to reason. He implored her to remember that the world was censorious and that scandal was beginning to be busy with their names.

At last she left Dublin and removed to Celbridge. There, in seclusion, she continued to cherish her hopeless passion; there Swift for some years regularly corresponded with her and occasionally visited her; and there, in 1723, while still in the bloom of womanhood, she died.

This is a melancholy story, but it is a story little likely to lose in the telling, and peculiarly susceptible of prejudiced distortion. It behoves us, therefore, before passing judgment on Swift's conduct, to distinguish carefully between what has been asserted and what has been proved, between what rests on mere conjecture and what rests on authentic testimony. Now we may say at once that all that is certainly known of his connection with Hester Vanhomrigh is what may be gathered from the letters that passed between them, and from his own poem of *Cadenus and Vanessa*, and all that can be safely conjectured is that, when they finally parted, they parted abruptly and in anger. This exhausts the evidence on which we can fairly rely in judging Swift; but this is very far from exhausting the evidence on which the world has judged him. First came the almost incredibly malignant perversions of Orrery. Then came the loose and random gossip of Mrs. Pilkington and Thomas Sheridan. Out of these and similar materials Scott wove his dramatic

narrative—not, indeed, with any prejudice against Swift, but doing him signal injustice by disseminating stories greatly calculated to prejudice others against him. Thus he tells, and tells most impressively, a story which, if true, would justify us in believing the very worst of Swift. Hester Vanhomrigh—so the story runs—having discovered his intimacy with Stella, wrote to her, requesting to know the nature of her connection with Swift. Stella, indignant that such a question should be put to her, placed the letter in Swift's hands. Swift instantly rode off in a paroxysm of fury to Celbridge, and, abruptly entering the room where Miss Vanhomrigh was sitting, flung the letter angrily on the table, and then, without saying a word, remounted his horse and galloped back to Dublin. From that moment he was a stranger to her. In a few weeks Vanessa was in her grave.

The authority cited for this anecdote is Sheridan,¹ who wrote nearly sixty years after the event he narrates, who is confessedly among the most inaccurate and uncritical of Swift's biographers, whose habit of grossly exaggerating whatever he described is notorious, and who has been more than once suspected of enlivening his pages with deliberate fabrications. In the present case, however, he had contented himself with embellishment; for the story had been already told, first by Orrery, in whose hands it had assumed an entirely different form, and secondly by Hawkesworth, who merely copied what he found in Orrery. What Orrery says is that Vanessa wrote, not to Stella, but to Swift; and that the object of her letter was, not to ascertain the nature of Swift's con-

¹ *Life of Swift*, pp. 330-1; *Remarks*, p. 113.

nection with her rival, but to ascertain his intentions with regard to herself—in other words, to insist on knowing whether it was his intention to make her his wife. Why the letter, which he describes as a very tender one—it would be interesting to know how he could have seen it—should have had such an effect on Swift he has not condescended to explain. But Orrery's whole story is not only in itself monstrously improbable, but it rests on his own unsupported testimony; and on the value of Orrery's unsupported testimony it is scarcely necessary to comment.

Such is the evidence in support of one of the gravest of the charges which have been brought against Swift with respect to Vanessa. Again, Scott asserts, still following Sheridan, that, on hearing of Miss Vanhomrigh's death, Swift 'retreated in an agony of self-reproach and remorse into the South of Ireland, where he spent two months, without the place of his abode being known to any one.' Nothing can be more untrue. A reference to his correspondence at this period will show that he had long intended to take what he calls a southern journey, that many of his friends were acquainted with his movements, and that, so far from wishing to bury himself in solitude, he was extremely vexed that a clergyman, who had promised to be his companion, disappointed him at the last moment.¹ That Miss Vanhomrigh's death deeply distressed him is likely enough; that it excited in him any such emotions as Scott and Sheridan describe requires better proof than evidence which, on the only point on which it is capable of being tested, turns out to be false.

¹ Letter to Robert Cope, June 1723, *Works*, xvi. 440.

To pass, however, from what is apocryphal to what is authentic. A careful study of the letters which passed between Swift and Vanessa¹ must satisfy anyone that Swift's conduct throughout was far less culpable than it would at first sight seem to have been. It resolves itself, in fact, into one great error. As soon as he discovered that he had inspired a passion which he was unable to return, his intercourse with Miss Vanhomrigh should have immediately ceased. All that followed, followed as the result of that error. And yet that error was, as his poem and correspondence clearly show, a mere error of judgment. Had he been aware that, by continuing the intimacy, he was pursuing a course which would be fatal to the girl's happiness, he was either under the spell of a libertine passion or he was a man of a nature inconceivably callous and brutal. That he was no libertine is admitted even by those who have taken the least favourable view of his conduct; that he was neither callous nor brutal, but, on the contrary, a man pre-eminently distinguished by humanity and tenderness, is admitted by no one more emphatically than by Miss Vanhomrigh herself.

The truth is that he recognised no essential distinction between the affection which exists between man and man, and the affection which exists between man and woman. He knew, indeed, that in the latter case it frequently becomes complicated with passion, but such a complication he regarded as purely accidental. It was a mere excrescence which, without the nutrition of sympathetic folly, would wither up and perish. It was a fault of the heart, which the head would and should correct.

¹ The correspondence is printed by Scott, xix. 393-454.

Hence he saw no necessity for breaking off a friendship which he valued. Hence the indifference, the easy jocularly, with which, after the first emotion of surprise was over, he persistently treated the poor girl's rhapsodies. Time passed on, and before he could discover his error it was too late to repair it. From the moment of Mrs. Vanhomrigh's death he was, in truth, involved in a labyrinth, out of which it was not merely difficult, but simply impossible, to extricate himself. If he attempted, as he twice did attempt, to take the step to which duty pointed, entreaties, which would have melted a heart far more obdurate than his, instantly recalled him. Could he leave a miserable girl—such is the burden of the first appeal which was made to him—to struggle alone with 'a wretch of a brother, cunning executors, and importunate creditors'? 'Pray what,' she asks, 'can be wrong in seeing and advising an unhappy young woman?' 'All I beg is that you will for once counterfeit, since you can't do otherwise, that indulgent friend you once were, till I get the better of these difficulties.' He assists her; he visits her; he sees her safely through her difficulties; and he again withdraws. Upon that she breaks out into hysterical raving, informs him that she had been on the point of destroying herself, and appeals to him in the most piteous terms to renew his visits. To this he replies in the letter which has been already quoted, and he grants the favour so importunately and indelicately extorted. It is remarkable that throughout the whole correspondence she makes no attempt to conceal the fact that she is forcing herself upon him, frankly admitting over and over again that there had been

nothing either in his actions or in his words to justify her conduct. Search as we may, however carefully, for any indications of a belief, or even of a hint on her part, that she had been deceived or misled, nothing of the kind is to be found. From beginning to end it is the same story—on the woman's side, blind, uncontrollable passion—on the man's side, perplexity, commiseration, undeviating kindness. 'Believe me,' she says at the commencement of one of her letters, 'it is with the utmost regret that I now complain to you, because I know your good nature that you cannot see any human creature miserable without being sensibly touched; yet what can I do? I must unload my heart.' But she was not always, it may be added, in the melting mood. Occasionally she expressed herself in very different language. It is easy to conceive Swift's embarrassment on having the following missive handed in to him while entertaining a party of friends at the deanery:—

I believe you thought I only rallied when I told you the other night that I would pester you with letters. Once more I advise you, if you have any regard for your own quiet, to alter your behaviour quickly,—

that is, to visit her more frequently, though he had already told her that scandal was beginning to be busy with their names—

for I have too much spirit to sit down contented with this treatment. Pray think calmly of it! Is it not better to come of yourself than to be brought by force, and that perhaps when you have the most agreeable engagement in the world [an allusion probably to Esther Johnson], for when I undertake anything, I don't love to do it by halves.

In a letter written not long afterwards he com-

plains bitterly of the embarrassment which one of her communications had caused. 'I received your letter,' he writes, 'when some company was with me on Saturday, and it put me into such confusion, that I could not tell what to do.' His patience was often, no doubt, severely tried, and his irritation appears occasionally to have found sharp expression. But it is clear from his letters that until within a few months of Vanessa's death he studied in every way to soothe and cheer her. What finally parted them we have now no means of knowing. That they parted in anger and were never afterwards reconciled seems certain. It is possible that the habits of intemperance to which Miss Vanhomrigh latterly gave way¹ may have led to some action or some expression which Swift could neither pardon nor forget.

Far be it from any man to speak a harsh or disrespectful word of this unhappy woman. Never, perhaps, has the grave closed over a sadder or more truly tragical life. It is a story which no man of sensibility could possibly follow without deep emotion. But such emotion should not be permitted to blind us to justice and truth. No protest can be too strong against the course adopted by writers like Jeffrey and Thackeray in treating of this portion of Swift's life. They assume that the measure of Vanessa's frenzy is the measure of Swift's culpability. They argue that, because she was infatuated, he was inhuman. They print long extracts from her ravings, and then ask, with indignation, whether there could be two opinions about the man whose conduct had wrought such

¹ Delany, pp. 123-4.

wretchedness. Nor is it surprising that they should have carried their point. The world knows that, when women address men in such language as Vanessa addresses Swift, they are not as a rule taking the initiative; that, if feminine passion is strong, feminine delicacy is stronger; and that nothing is more improbable than that a young and eminently attractive woman should, for twelve years, continue, without the smallest encouragement, to force her love on a man who, though double her age, was still in the prime of life. And yet this was most assuredly the case. Vanessa is most sincerely to be pitied, but there is nothing in Swift's conduct to justify the charges which hostile biographers have brought against him.

Condemn you him for that the maid did love him?
 So may you blame some fair and crystal river
 For that some melancholic distracted woman
 Hath drown'd herself in 't.

But it is only right to say that those who have judged him thus harshly have proceeded on an assumption which would, if correct, have greatly modified this view of the question. If Swift was the husband of Esther Johnson, it may be admitted, without the smallest hesitation, that his conduct was all that his enemies would represent. It was at once cruel and mean; it was at once cowardly and treacherous; it was at once lying and hypocritical. In that case every visit he paid, every letter he wrote, to Miss Vanhomrigh subsequent to 1716 was derogatory to him. We may go further. In that case, we are justified in believing the very worst of him, not only in his relations with Stella and Vanessa, but in his relations with men and the world. In that case, there is not ambi-

guous action, either in his public or in his private career, which does not become pregnant with suspicion. For, in that case, he stands convicted of having passed half his life in systematically practising, and in compelling the woman he loved to practise systematically, the two vices which of all vices he professed to hold in the deepest abhorrence. Those who know anything of Swift know with what loathing he always shrank from anything bearing the remotest resemblance to duplicity and falsehood. As a political pamphleteer he might, like his brother-penmen, allow himself licence, but in the ordinary intercourse of life it was his habit to exact and assume absolute sincerity. It was the virtue, indeed, on which he ostentatiously prided himself; it was the virtue by which, in the opinion of those who were intimate with him, he was most distinguished. 'Dr. Swift may be described,' observed Bolingbroke on one occasion, 'as a hypocrite reversed.' He was never known to tell an untruth.

In discussing, therefore, the question of his supposed marriage, the point at issue is not simply whether he was the husband of Esther Johnson, but whether we are to believe him capable of acting in a manner wholly inconsistent with his principles and his reputation—in other words, whether we are to believe that a man, whose scrupulous veracity and whose repugnance to falsehood in any form were proverbial, would, with the object of concealing what there was surely no adequate motive for concealing, deliberately devise the subtlest and most elaborate system of hypocrisy ever yet exposed to the world. It is scarcely necessary to say that the documents

bearing on Swift's relations with Esther Johnson are very voluminous, and, from a biographical point of view, of unusual value. We have the verses which he was accustomed to send to her on the anniversary of her birthday. We have the *Journal* addressed to her during his residence in London. We have allusions to her in his most secret memoranda. We have the letters written in agony to Worrall, Stopford, and Sheridan, when he expected that every post would bring him news of her death. We have the prayers which he offered up at her bedside during her last hours; and we have the whole history of his acquaintance with her, written with his own hand while she was lying unburied in her coffin—a history intended for no eye but his own. Now, from the beginning to the end of these documents, there is not one line which could by any possibility be tortured into an indication that she was his wife. Throughout the language is the same. He addresses her as the 'kindest and wisest of his friends.' He described her in his *Memoir* as 'the truest, most virtuous and valuable friend that I, or perhaps any other person, was ever blessed with.' In all his letters he alludes to her in similar terms. In the *Diary at Holyhead* she is his 'dearest friend.' At her bedside, when the end was hourly expected, he prays for her as his 'dear and useful friend.' 'There is not,' he writes to Dr. Stopford on the occasion of Stella's fatal illness, 'a greater folly than that of entering into too strict and particular friendship, with the loss of which a man must be absolutely miserable, but especially at an age when it is too late to engage in a new friendship; besides, this was a person of my own rearing and instructing from childhood; but, pardon me, I know

not what I am saying, but, believe me, that violent-
 friendship is much more lasting and engaging than
 violent love.' If Stella was his wife, could hypocrisy
 go further? It is certain that he not only led all
 who were acquainted with him to believe that he was
 unmarried, but, whenever he spoke of wedlock, he
 spoke of it as a thing utterly alien to his tastes and
 inclinations. 'I never yet,' he once said to a gentle-
 man who was speaking to him about marriage, 'saw
 the woman I would wish to make my wife.' It would
 be easy to multiply instances, both in his correspond-
 ence and in his recorded conversation, in which, if
 he was even formally a married man, he went out of
 his way to indulge in unnecessary hypocrisy. What,
 again, could be more improbable than that Esther
 Johnson, a woman of distinguished piety, nay, a
 woman whose detestation of falsehood formed, as
 Swift has himself told us, one of her chief attrac-
 tions, would, when on the point of death, preface her
 will with a wholly gratuitous lie? For not only

Is it credible that a man could have addressed a woman who
 had, if the theory of the marriage is true, been his wife for four years,
 in lines like these—lines, we may add, intended for no eyes but her
 own?—

Thou, Stella, wert no longer young
 When first for thee my harp was strung
 Without one word of Cupid's darts,
 Of killing eyes or bleeding hearts.
 With friendship and esteem possess'd
 I ne'er admitted love a guest.
 In all the habitudes of life,
 The friend, the mistress, and the wife,
 Variety we still pursue,
 In pleasure seek for something new;
 But his pursuits are at an end
 Whom Stella chooses for a friend.

is that will signed with her maiden name, but in the first clause she describes herself as an unmarried woman.

The external evidence against the marriage appears equally conclusive. If there was any person entitled to speak with authority on the subject, that person was assuredly Mrs. Dingley. For twenty-nine years, from the commencement, that is to say, of Swift's intimate connection with Stella till the day of Stella's death, she had been her inseparable companion, her friend and confidant. She had shared the same lodgings with her; it was understood that Swift and Esther were to have no secrets apart from her. When they met, they met in her presence; what they wrote, passed, by Swift's special request, through her hands. Now it is well known that Mrs. Dingley was convinced that no marriage had ever taken place. The whole story was, she said, an idle tale. Two of Stella's executors, Dr. Corbet and Mr. Rochford, distinctly stated that no suspicion of a marriage had ever even crossed their minds, though they had seen the Dean and Esther together a thousand times. Swift's housekeeper, Mrs. Brent, a shrewd and observant woman, who resided at the deanery during the whole period of her master's intimacy with Miss Johnson, was satisfied that there had been no marriage. So said Mrs. Ridgeway, who succeeded her as housekeeper, and who watched over the Dean in his declining years. But no testimony could carry greater weight than that of Dr. John Lyon. He was one of Swift's most intimate friends, and, when the state of the Dean's health was such that it had become necessary to place him under surveillance, Lyon was the

person selected to undertake the duty. He lived with him at the deanery; he had full control over his papers; he was consequently brought into contact with all who corresponded with him, and with all who visited him. He had thus at his command every contemporary source of information. Not long after the story was first circulated, he set to work to ascertain, if possible, the truth. The result of his investigations was to convince him that there was absolutely no foundation for it but popular gossip, unsupported by a particle of evidence.

Such is the testimony against the marriage. Let us now briefly review the evidence in its favour. The first writer who mentions it is Orrery, and his words are these: 'Stella was the concealed but undoubted wife of Dr. Swift, and if my informations are right, she was married to him in the year 1716 by Dr. Ash, then Bishop of Clogher.'¹ On this we need merely remark that he offers no proof whatever of what he asserts, though he must have known well enough that what he asserted was contrary to current tradition; that in thus expressing himself he was guilty of gross inconsistency, as he had nine years before maintained the opposite opinion;² and that there is every reason to believe that he resorted to this fiction, as he resorted to other fictions, with the simple object of seasoning his narrative with the piquant scandal in which he notoriously delighted. The next deponent is Delany,³ whose independent testi-

¹ *Remarks*, p. 22.

² See his letter to Deane Swift, dated Dec. 4, 1742; *Scott*, xix. 336.

³ *Observations on Orrery's Remarks*, p. 52 *seqq.*

mony would undoubtedly have carried great weight with it. But Delany simply follows Orrery, without explaining his reason for doing so, without bringing forward anything in proof of what Orrery had stated, and without contributing a single fact on his own authority. Then comes Deane Swift,¹ All that he contributes to the question is simply the statement that he was thoroughly persuaded that Swift was married to Stella in or about 1716. But he gives no explanation of what induced his persuasion, and admits that there was no evidence at all of the marriage. And, unsatisfactory as his testimony is, it is rendered more so by the fact that some years before he had, in a letter to Lord Orrery, stated that to many the marriage seemed based only 'on a buzz and rumours.'² Such was the story in its first stage. In 1780 a new particular was added, and a new authority cited. The new particular was that the marriage took place in the garden; the new authority was Dr. Samuel Madden, and the narrator was Dr. Johnson. Of Madden it may suffice to say that there is no proof that he was acquainted either with Swift himself or with any member of Swift's circle; that in temper and blood he was half French, half Irish; and that as a writer he is chiefly known as the author of a work wilder and more absurd than the wildest and most absurd of Whiston's prophecies or Asgill's paradoxes. On the value of the unsupported testimony of such a person there is surely no necessity for commenting. Next comes Sheridan's account, which, as it adds an incident very much to Swift's discredit, it is necessary

¹ *Essay on the Life and Writings of Swift*, p. 92 seqq.

² *Orrery Papers*, quoted by Mr. Craik.

to examine with some care. The substance of it is this :—that, at the earnest solicitation of Stella, Swift consented to marry her ; that the marriage ceremony was performed without witnesses, and on two conditions—first, that they should continue to live separately ; and secondly, that their union should remain a secret ; that for some years these conditions were observed, but that on her death-bed Stella implored Swift to acknowledge her as his wife ; that to this request Swift made no reply, but, turning on his heel, left the room, and never afterwards saw her. The first part of this story he professes to have derived from Mrs. Sican, the second part from his father. We have no right to charge Sheridan with deliberate falsehood, but his whole account of Swift's relations with Miss Johnson teems with inconsistencies and improbabilities so glaring that it is impossible to place the smallest confidence in what he says. He here tells us that the marriage had been kept a profound secret ; in another place he tells us that Stella had herself communicated it to Miss Vanhomrigh. He admits that the only unequivocal proof of the marriage is the evidence of Dr. Sheridan, and yet in his account of the marriage he cites as his authority, not Dr. Sheridan, but Mrs. Sican. But a single circumstance is, perhaps, quite sufficient to prove the utterly untrustworthy character of his assertions. He informs us, on the authority of his father, that Stella was so enraged by Swift's refusal to acknowledge her as his wife, that to spite and annoy him she bequeathed her fortune to a public charity. A reference to Swift's correspondence¹ will show that it was in accordance

¹ See Swift's letter to Worrall, dated July 15, 1726.

with his wishes that she thus disposed of her property. A reference to the will itself will show that, so far from expressing ill-will towards him, she left him her strong box and all her papers. Nor is this all. His statement is flatly contradicted both by Delany and by Deane Swift. Delany tells us that he had been informed by a friend that Swift had earnestly desired to acknowledge the marriage, but that Stella had wished it to remain a secret. Deane Swift assured Orrery, on the authority of Mrs. Whiteway, that Stella had told Sheridan 'that Swift had offered to declare the marriage to the world, but that she had refused.' Again, Sheridan asserts that his father, Dr. Sheridan, was present during the supposed conversation between Swift and Stella. Mrs. Whiteway, on the contrary, assured Deane Swift that Dr. Sheridan was not present on that occasion.¹

This brings us to the last deponent whose evidence is worth consideration. In 1789 Mr. Monck-Berkeley² brought forward the authority of a Mrs. Hearne, who was, it seems, a niece of Esther Johnson, to prove that the Dean had made Stella his wife. As nothing, however, is known of the history of Mrs. Hearne, and as she cited nothing in corroboration of her statement, except vaguely that it was a tradition among her relatives—a tradition which was, of course, just as likely to have had its origin from the narratives of Orrery and Delany as in any authentic communication—no importance whatever can be attached to it. But the evidence on which Monck-Berkeley chiefly relied was

¹ For Sheridan's narrative, see section vi. of his *Life of Swift*.

² See Monck-Berkeley's *Inquiry into the Life of Dean Swift*, prefixed to his *Literary Relics*, xxvi.-xxix.

not that of Mrs. Hearne. 'I was,' he says, 'informed by the relict of Bishop Berkeley that her husband had assured her of the truth of Swift's marriage, as the Bishop of Clogher, who had performed the ceremony, had himself communicated the circumstance to him.' If this could be depended on, it would, of course, settle the question; but, unfortunately for Monck-Berkeley, and for Monck-Berkeley's adherents, it can be conclusively proved that no such communication could have taken place. In 1715, a year before the supposed marriage was solemnised, Berkeley was in Italy, where he remained till 1721. Between 1716 and 1717 it is certain that the Bishop of Clogher never left Ireland, and at the end of 1717 he died. As for the testimony on which Scott lays so much stress—the story, that is to say, about Mrs. Whiteway having heard Swift mutter to Stella that 'if she wished, it should be owned,' and of having heard Stella sigh back to Swift that 'it was too late'—it need only be observed, first, that it was communicated about seventy years after the supposed words had been spoken, not by the son of Mrs. Whiteway, who, had he known of it or had he attached the smallest importance to it, would have inserted it in his *Memoirs of Swift*, but by her grandson, Theophilus Swift, who was the laughing-stock of all who knew him; ¹ secondly, it was admitted that those words, and that those words only, had been heard, and that consequently there was nothing to indicate either that the words themselves, or that the

¹ Those who would understand what Theophilus Swift was would do well to turn to *The Touch-stone of Truth uniting Mr. Swift's late Correspondence with the Rev. Doctor Dobbin and his Family*. Such another fool probably never existed out of fiction.

conversation of which they formed a portion, had any reference to the marriage.

How, then, stands the case? Even thus. Against the marriage we have the fact that there is no documentary evidence of its having been solemnised; that, so far from there being any evidence of it deducible from the conduct of Swift and Stella, Orrery himself admits that it would be difficult, if not impossible, to prove that they had ever been alone together during their whole lives. We have the fact that Esther Johnson, at a time when there could have been no possible motive for falsehood, emphatically asserted that she was unmarried: the fact that Swift led every one to believe that he was unmarried: the fact that Esther Johnson's bosom friend and inseparable companion was satisfied that there had been no marriage; the fact that two of Swift's house-keepers, two of Stella's executors, and Dr. Lyon, were satisfied that there had been no marriage. It is easy to say that all that has been advanced merely proves that the marriage was a secret, and that the secret was well kept. But that is no answer. The question must be argued on evidence; and it is incumbent on those who insist, in the teeth of such evidence as has been adduced, that a marriage was solemnised, to produce evidence as satisfactory. This they have failed to do. Till they have done so, let us decline to charge Swift with mendacity and hypocrisy, and to convict him of having acted both meanly and treacherously in his dealings with the two women whose names will for all time be bound up with his. In itself it matters not two straws to any one whether Swift was or was not the husband of Stella. But the

point of importance is this. If he was the husband of Stella, his conduct to Miss Vanhomrigh admits of no defence—it was unmanly and dishonourable. If he was not married to Stella, the fate of her rival leaves no stain on his memory. Moral courage in a man's relations with men is, it is true, quite compatible with moral cowardice in his relations with women, but that this deplorable anomaly finds illustration in Swift is at present mere assumption. However, it is too late now to reverse, or even to modify, the verdict of the world. The story of Stella and Vanessa soon passed from essayists and biographers to novelists and poets. Not long after Swift's death appeared, dedicated to the Countess of Pembroke, a wretched fiction entitled *The Amours and Intrigues of a certain Irish Dean*. *Chaufepié*, in his supplements to *Bayle's Dictionary*, scattered, in an article on Swift, the traditions of Orrery, Delany, and Deane Swift broadcast over Europe. The romance arrested Lessing, who founded on it his famous domestic drama *Miss Sara Sampson*. Then it was consecrated by the genius of Goethe, and his *Stella* made it a household word wherever German was spoken. It has formed the plot of more than one romance in French. It is now going the round of Mr. Mudie's readers in a three-volume novel.

CHAPTER VII

IRISH POLITICS

I

'NOTHING has convinced me so much that I am of a little subaltern spirit, *inopis atque pusilli animi*, as to reflect how I am forced into the most trifling amusements to divert the vexation of former thoughts and present objects.' So wrote Swift to Bolingbroke at the end of 1719. And reason, indeed, were his old enemies soon to have for exclaiming with the Roman poet:

Utinam his potius nugis tota illa dedisset
Tempora sævitæ !

With the new year his diversion took another turn. In the spring he began to direct his attention seriously to Irish affairs. In the summer appeared the pamphlet which opened the war with England. It was entitled *A Proposal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufactures*, and its ostensible object was to induce the people of Ireland to rely entirely, so far at least as house furniture and wearing apparel were concerned, on their own industry and on their own produce, and to close their markets against everything wearable which should be imported from England. In the first part of this proposal there was nothing new.

It was merely the embodiment of a resolution which had been repeatedly passed by the Irish House of Commons, and passed without opposition from the Crown. It may be doubted whether even the second part of the proposal, audacious though it undoubtedly was, would in itself have provoked the English Government to retaliate. But the ostensible object of the pamphlet, as it requires very little penetration to see, was by no means its only or indeed its chief object. In effect it was a bitter protest against the inhumanity and injustice which had since 1665 characterised the Irish policy of England; and it was an appeal to Ireland to assert her independence in the only way in which fortune had as yet enabled her to assert it. Both as a protest and as an appeal, the pamphlet was equally justified. Even now, on recalling those cruel statutes which completed between 1665 and 1699 the annihilation of Irish trade, it is impossible not to feel something of the indignation which burned in Swift. In 1660 there was every prospect that in a few years Ireland might become a happy and prosperous country. Her natural advantages were great. In no regions within the compass of the British Isles was the soil more fertile. As pasture land she was indeed to the modern world what Argos was to the ancient. She was not without navigable rivers; the ports and harbours with which Nature had bountifully provided her were the envy of every maritime nation in Europe; and her geographical position was eminently propitious to commercial enterprise. For the first time in her history she was at peace. The aborigines had at last succumbed to the Englishry. A race of sturdy and industrious colonists

were rapidly changing the face of the country. Agriculture was thriving. A remunerative trade in live cattle and in miscellaneous farm produce had been opened with England; a still more remunerative trade in manufactured wool was holding out prospects still more promising. There were even hopes of an extensive mercantile connection with the colonies. But the dawn of this fair day was soon overcast. Impelled partly by jealousy, partly by that short-sighted selfishness which was, in former days, so unhappily conspicuous in her commercial relations with subject states, and partly in accordance with the principles ordinarily regulating her colonial policy, England proceeded to the systematic destruction of Irish commerce and of Irish industrial art. First came the two statutes forbidding the importation of live cattle and farm produce into England, and Ireland was at once deprived of her chief source of revenue. Then came the statutes which annihilated her colonial trade. Crushing and terrible though these blows were, she still, however, continued to struggle on, crippled and dispirited indeed, but not entirely without heart. But in 1699 was enacted the statute which completed her ruin. By this she was prohibited from seeking any vent for her raw and manufactured wool except in England and Wales, where the duties imposed on both these commodities were so heavy as virtually to exclude them from the market. The immediate result of this atrocious measure was to turn flourishing villages into deserts, and to throw between twenty and thirty thousand able-bodied and industrious artisans on public charity. The ultimate result of all these measures was the complete paralysis of opera-

tive energy, the emigration of the only class who were of benefit to the community, and the commencement of a period of unprecedented wretchedness and degradation.¹

The condition of Ireland between 1700 and 1750 was in truth such as no historian, who was not prepared to have his narrative laid aside with disgust and incredulity, would venture to depict. If analogy is to be sought for it, it must be sought in the scenes through which, in the frightful fiction of Monti, the disembodied spirit of Bassville was condemned to roam. In a time of peace the unhappy island suffered all the most terrible calamities which follow in the train of war. Famine succeeding famine decimated the provincial villages and depopulated whole regions. Travellers have described how their way has lain through districts strewn like a battlefield with unburied corpses, which lay some in ditches, some on the roadside, and some on heaps of offal, the prey of dogs and carrion birds.² 'I have seen,' says a writer quoted by Mr. Lecky,³ 'the helpless orphan exposed on the dunghill, and the hungry infant sucking

¹ See *The Present Miserable State of Ireland*, in a letter from a gentleman in Dublin—attributed to Swift and printed in the Appendix to Scott's *Swift*, vol. i. lxxxix. seqq. The chief tracts and letters of Swift bearing on Irish affairs are, in addition to the *Proposal* and the *Drapier Letters*, *Two Letters on Subjects Relative to Ireland*, Scott, vol. vii.; *The Story of an Injured Lady*, id.; *A Short View of the State of Ireland*, id.; *Maxims controlled in Ireland*, id.; *A Letter to the Archbishop of Dublin concerning the Weavers*, id.; *Answer to a Paper called a Memorial*, id.; *A Modest Proposal*, id.; *Letter to Peterborough*, Scott, xvii. 68; Sermon ix. *On the Causes of the Wretched Condition of Ireland*.

² Burdy's *Life of Skelton*, p. 333.

³ *History of England in the Eighteenth Century*, li. 219.

at the breast of the already expired servant.' Even when there was no actual famine, the food of the rustic vulgar was often such as our domestic animals would reject with disgust. Their ordinary fare was buttermilk and potatoes, and when these failed they were at the mercy of fortune. Frequently the pot of the wretched cottier contained nothing but the product of the marsh and the waste ground. The flesh of a horse which had died in harness, the flesh of woodland vermin, even when corruption had begun to do its revolting work, were devoured voraciously. Burdy¹ tells us that these famishing savages would surreptitiously bleed the cattle which they had not the courage to steal, and, boiling the blood with sorrel, convert the sickening mixture into food. Epidemic diseases, and all the loathsome maladies which were the natural inheritance of men whose food was the food of hogs and jackals, whose dwellings were scarcely distinguishable from dunghills, and whose personal habits were filthy even to beastliness, raged with a fury rarely witnessed in Western latitudes. Not less deplorable was the spectacle presented by the country itself. 'Whoever took a journey through Ireland,' says Swift, 'would be apt to imagine himself travelling in Lapland or Iceland.' In the south, in the east, and in the west, stretched vast tracks of land untilled and unpeopled, mere waste and solitude. Even where Nature had been most bounteous, the traveller might wander for miles without finding a single habitation, without meeting a single human being, without beholding a single trace of human culture. Many of the churches were roofless, the

¹ *Life of Skelton*, p. 385.

walls still gaping with the breaches which the cannon of Cromwell had made in them. Almost all the old seats of the nobility were in ruins. In the villages and country towns every object on which the eye rested told the same lamentable story.

Much of this misery was undoubtedly to be attributed to the inhabitants themselves. For the aborigines Swift could scarcely find terms sufficiently strong to express his contempt. He always, indeed, denied their title to the denomination of Irishmen, and nothing enraged him more than the persistency with which the English Government confounded, under the common name of Irish, the natives and the Englishry. He regarded it, and perhaps justly, as a manœuvre employed to thwart and baffle his efforts to place Ireland on a footing of equality with England.¹ But there was little to choose between them. It was distinction without difference. If the Celt had been exterminated, Celtic infiltration had done its work. Never had co-operation and concord been more necessary, but never had civil and religious dissension raged with greater fury than it was raging now. Feuds in religion, feuds in politics, feuds which had their origin in private differences, and feuds which had descended as a cursed heirloom from father to child, rankled in their hearts and inflamed their blood. There was the old enmity between the aborigines and the English; there was a deadly feud between the Catholics and the Protestants; there was a feud not less deadly between the Episcopalians and the Non conformists; while the war between Whig and Tory

¹ See particularly his letter to Peterborough giving an account of what he had submitted to Walpole (*Scott's Swift*, xvii. 68).

was prosecuted with a ferocity and malignity scarcely human. 'There is hardly a Whig in Ireland,' wrote Swift to Sheridan, 'who would allow a potato and buttermilk to a reputed Tory.' But this was not all. The principal landowners resided in England, leaving as their lieutenants a class of men known in Irish history as Middlemen. It may be doubted whether, since the days of the Roman Publicans, oppression and rapacity had ever assumed a shape so odious as they assumed in these men. The Middleman was, as a rule, entirely destitute of education; his tastes were low, his habits debauched and recklessly extravagant. Long familiarity with such scenes as have been described had rendered him not merely indifferent to human suffering, but ruthless and brutal. All the tenancies held under him were at rack-rent, and with the extraction of that rent, or what was, in kind, equivalent to that rent, began and ended his relations with his tenants. As many of those tenants were little better than impecunious serfs, often insolvent and always in arrears, it was only by keeping a wary eye on their movements, and by pouncing with seasonable avidity on anything of which they might happen to become possessed, either by the labour of their hands or by some accident of fortune, that he could turn them to account. Sometimes the produce of the potato-plot became his prey, sometimes their agricultural tools; not unfrequently he would seize everything which belonged to them, and, driving them with their wives and children, often under circumstances of revolting cruelty, out of their cabins, send them to perish of cold and hunger in the open country.

Nor were the Irish provincial gentry in any way

superior to the Middlemen. Swift, indeed, regarded them with still greater detestation. As public men, they were chiefly remarkable for their savage oppression of the clergy, for the mercilessness with which they exacted their rack-rents from the tenantry, and for the mean ingenuity with which they contrived to make capital out of the miseries of their country. In private life they were dissolute, litigious, and arrogant, and their vices would comprehend some of the worst vices incident to man—inhuman cruelty, tyranny in its most repulsive aspects, brutal appetites forcibly gratified, or gratified under circumstances scarcely less atrocious, and an ostentatious lawlessness which revelled unchecked either by civil authority or by religion.

But, whatever degree of culpability may attach itself to the inhabitants of Ireland, there can be no question that the English Government were in the main responsible for the existence of this hell. It requires very little sagacity to see that the miseries of Ireland flowed naturally and inevitably from the paralysis of national industry, from the alienation of the national revenue, from the complete dislocation of the machinery of government, and from the almost total absence, so far at least as the masses were concerned, of the influence of civilising culture and religion. Reference has already been made to the statutes which annihilated the trade and prostrated the industrial energy of the country. Equally iniquitous and oppressive was the alienation of the revenue. On that revenue had been quartered the parasites and mistresses of succeeding generations of English kings. Almost all the most remunerative public posts were

sinecures in the possession of men who resided in England. Indeed, some of these sinecurists had never set foot on Irish earth. But nothing was more derogatory to England than the scandalous condition of the Protestant hierarchy. On that body depended not only the spiritual welfare but the education of the multitude, and their responsibility was the greater in consequence of the inhibitions which had been laid by the Legislature on the Catholic priesthood. But the Protestant clergy were, as a class, a scandal to Christendom. Many of the bishops would have disgraced the hierarchy of Henry III. Their ignorance, their apathy, their nepotism, were proverbial. It was not uncommon for them to abandon even the semblance of their sacred character, and to live the life of jovial country squires, their palaces ringing with revelry, their dioceses mere anarchy. If their sees were not to their taste, they resided elsewhere. The Bishop of Down, for example, settled at Hammersmith, where he lived for twenty years without having once during the whole of that time set foot in his diocese.¹ That there were a few noble exceptions must in justice be admitted. No churchman could pronounce the names of Berkeley, King, and Synge without reverence. But the virtues of these illustrious prelates had little influence either on their degenerate peers or on the inferior clergy. Of this body it would not be too much to say that no section of the demoralised society of which they formed a part was more demoralised or so completely despicable. Here and there indeed might be found a priest who resided among his

¹ See for all this Lecky's *History of England in the Eighteenth Century* (ii. 231-235), and the authorities quoted by him.

parishioners, and who performed conscientiously the duties of his profession. Such a priest was Skelton, and such a priest was Jackson, but Skelton and Jackson were to the general body of the minor clergy what Dr. Primrose was to Trulliber, or what the parson in the *Canterbury Tales* is to the parson in *Peregrine Pickle*.

Few men could have contemplated unmoved the spectacle of a country in such a condition as this. Its effect on Swift was to excite emotions which in ordinary men are seldom excited save by personal injuries. It fevered his blood, it broke his rest, it drove him at times half-frantic with furious indignation, it sunk him at times in abysses of sullen despondency. He brooded over it in solitude; it is his constant theme in his correspondence; it was his constant topic in conversation. He spoke of it as eating his flesh and exhausting his spirits. For a while he cherished the hope that these evils, vast and complicated though they were, were not beyond remedy. And this remedy lay, he thought, not in appealing to the justice and humanity of the English Government, for such an appeal he knew would be vain, but in appealing to the Irish themselves, to the landed gentry, to the middlemen, to the manufacturers, to the clergy. Throughout his object was twofold—the internal reformation of the kingdom, and the establishment of the principle that Ireland ought either to be autonomous or on a footing of exact political equality with the mother-country.

His first pamphlet, the *Proposal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufactures*, is a masterpiece. Addressed, in what it insinuates, to the passions, and in

what it directly asserts, to the reason, it is at once an inflammatory harangue and a manual of sober counsel. In a few plain paragraphs the secret of Ireland's wretchedness is laid bare, how far it is in her power to alleviate that wretchedness is demonstrated, and the step which ought immediately to be taken is pointed out. In the proposal that she should close her markets against English goods and draw entirely on her own manufactures there was nothing treasonable or even disrespectful to England. It was no more than she had a perfect right to do; it was no more than the English Government would probably have permitted her to do. But the pamphlet had another side. Though there is not perhaps a sentence in it which could, so far as the mere words are concerned, have been challenged as either inflammatory or insulting, the whole piece is in effect a fierce and bitter commentary on the tyranny of the mother-country, and an appeal to Ireland to strike, if not for independence, at least for indemnity. The pamphlet, though it appeared, as almost all Swift's pamphlets did appear, anonymously, instantly attracted attention. The English Government became alarmed. The work was pronounced to be 'seditious, factious, and virulent,' and the attention of Whitshed, then Chief Justice of Ireland, was directed to it. Whitshed, who had little sympathy with Irish agitation, and who was probably acting on instructions from England, proceeded at once to extreme measures. The pamphlet was laid before the Grand Jury of the county and the city. The printer was arrested. The trial came on, and a disgraceful scene ensued. The jury acquitted the prisoner. The Chief Justice refused to accept the

verdict, and the jury were sent back to reconsider their decision. Again they found the man not guilty, and again Whitshed declined to record the verdict. Nine times was this odious farce repeated, until the wretched men, worn out by physical fatigue, left the case by special verdict in the hands of the judge. But Whitshed's iniquitous triumph was merely nominal, for his conduct had excited such disgust that it was deemed advisable to put off the trial of the verdict. Successive postponements terminated at last in the Lord Lieutenant granting a *nolle prosequi*. Such a concession to popular feeling the English Government had never before made. It was a victory on which the Irish justly congratulated themselves. It was a victory destined, indeed, to form a new era in their history.

Nothing we know of Swift illustrates more strikingly his tact and sagacity as a political leader than his conduct at this juncture. A less skilful strategist would, in the elation of triumph, have been impatient for new triumphs, would have lost no time in pressing eagerly forward, and would thus have forced on a crisis when a crisis was premature. But Swift saw that affairs were at that stage when the wisest course is to leave them to themselves. The fire had been kindled—it might be safely trusted to spread; the leaven of dissatisfaction and resistance was seething—it was best to leave it to ferment. Up to a certain point the course of revolution is determined by human agency, but in all revolutions there is a point at which human agency is powerless, and the reins are in the hands of Fortune. At such crises occur those apparently insignificant accidents, the effects of which are so strangely disproportionate to

the character of the accidents themselves, and which are to political communities what the spark is to combustible explosives. Such a crisis had not as yet arrived in the struggle between England and Ireland, but for such a crisis—and he saw it was maturing—Swift deemed it expedient to wait.

He employed the interval in serving Ireland in another way. The mania for commercial adventures, which originating in Law's Mississippi Scheme had culminated in the South Sea Bubble, was now invading Dublin. Among other schemes, a project was formed for establishing a National Bank, and was regarded with favour by some of the leading citizens and many of the petty tradesmen in Dublin. But Swift saw that an institution eminently useful, and indeed necessary, in a prosperous community could only end in ruin and mischief in a community where stock is incommensurate with credit. He determined, therefore, to oppose the scheme; and ridicule was his weapon. Two pamphlets bearing the signature of Thomas Hope were soon in circulation. Introducing, by an *Essay on English Bubbles*, a project for establishing a Swearer's Bank, Mr. Hope proposes to raise a revenue by enforcing the Act against profane language. The fine for swearing was, he reminds his readers, one shilling, and of the two million who made up the population of Ireland one-half might be fairly computed as swearing souls. Of these it might be safely assumed that five thousand were gentlemen, everyone of whom could afford an oath a day. This would yield a yearly produce of 1,825,000 oaths; which, at a shilling each, would amount annually to 91,250*l.* Twenty-five thousand a year might be

expected from the farmers, who, if reckoned at 10,000, would surely be equal to the annual expenditure of 500,000 oaths. Provision for a sufficient number of informers would constitute, no doubt, a serious item in the expenses of the Bank, but, allowing for them and for all other necessary deductions, there would remain from these and other sources a clear yearly sum of 100,000*l.*, 'which,' says Mr. Hope, 'may very justly claim a million subscription.' As the projector's motives are purely patriotic, and as his scheme is designed solely for the benefit of the nation, he proposes that the Bank should be erected on parliamentary security. And, 'to take away all jealousy of any private view of the undertaker, he assures the world that he is now in a garret, in a very thin waistcoat, studying the public good; having given an undeniable pledge of his love to his country by pawning his cloak in order to defray the expense of the press.'

Swift's satire was effective. The project for a National Bank was rejected by the House of Commons in the ensuing Session.

These pamphlets were succeeded a few months afterwards by a little piece in which the extraordinary versatility of Swift's genius is very strikingly and very amusingly illustrated. The streets of Dublin had for several years been infested with gangs of marauders, whose depredations and violence made them the terror of the citizens. A man who ventured out unarmed at night carried, it was said, his life in his hands. Scarce a week passed without some gross outrage. At such a pitch, indeed, had their lawlessness and audacity arrived, that it had become perilous

even in broad daylight to walk in any but the most frequented thoroughfares. Conspicuous among these miscreants was one Ebenezer Elliston. The fellow had long succeeded in eluding the police, but had recently been captured and publicly executed. In itself, however, the execution would probably have had very little effect, for the class to which Elliston belonged is, as a rule, either too sanguine or too obtuse to take warning from example. But on the very day of the execution appeared, in the form of a broadsheet, an announcement which carried terror and dismay into every rookery in Dublin. This was the *Last Speech and Dying Words of Ebenezer Elliston*, published, as was stated on the title-page, by his own desire, and for the public good. In it he not only solemnly exhorted his brother-bandits to amend their lives, and to avoid the fate which had most righteously overtaken himself, and would in the end inevitably overtake them, but he informed them that, having resolved to atone in some measure for his own crimes against God and society, he had thought it his duty to do what in him lay to assist the Government in suppressing the crimes of others. 'For that purpose, I have,' he said, 'left with an honest man the names of all my wicked brethren, the present places of their abode, with a short account of the chief crimes they have committed. I have likewise set down the names of those we call our setters, of the wicked houses we frequent, and of those who receive and buy our stolen goods.' He then goes on to say that the person with whom the paper had been deposited would, on hearing of the arrest of any rogue whose name was mentioned in it, place the document

in the hands of the Government. 'And of this,' he adds, 'I hereby give my companions fair and public warning, and hope they will take it.' As Elliston was known to be a man of education, and as the information displayed in the piece was such as it seemed scarcely possible that any one who was not in the secrets of Elliston's fraternity could possess, the genuineness of the confession was never for a moment doubted. Its effect was, we are told, immediately apparent. Brigandism lost heart; many of the leading bandits quitted the city; and the Dean was enabled to boast that Dublin enjoyed, for a time at least, almost complete immunity from the most formidable of social pests.

And now arrived, suddenly and unexpectedly, that crisis in the struggle with England which Swift had with judicious patience been so long awaiting. For some years there had been a great scarcity of copper money, and the deficiency had led to the circulation of debased and counterfeit coins on a very large scale. Accordingly, in the spring of 1722, a memorial was presented to the Lords of the Treasury, stating the grievance and petitioning for a remedy. The petition was considered, and the memorialists were informed that measures would be immediately taken for remedying the evil. Such courteous alacrity had not been usual with the English Government in dealing with Irish grievances, and excited, not unnaturally, some surprise. But it was soon explained. In a few weeks intelligence reached Dublin that a patent had been granted to a person of the name of Wood, empowering him to coin as his exclusive right 108,000*l.* worth of farthings and halfpence for circula-

tion in Ireland. As less than a third of that sum in halfpence and farthings would have sufficed, and more than sufficed, for what was needed, the announcement was received with astonishment. And astonishment soon passed into indignation. For it appeared on inquiry that the patent had been granted without consulting the Irish Privy Council or any Irish official, nay, even without consulting the Lord Lieutenant, though he was then residing in London. It appeared, on further inquiry, that the whole transaction had been a disgraceful job, and that the person to whom the patent had been conceded was a mere adventurer, whose sole care was to make the grant sufficiently remunerative to indemnify himself for a heavy bribe which he had paid for obtaining it, and to fill his own pockets. The inference was obvious. As the profits of the man would be in proportion to the quantity of copper coin turned out by him, and in proportion to the inferiority of the metal employed in the manufacture, his first object would be the indefinite multiplication of his coinage, and his second object would be its debasement. In August the Commissioners of the Revenue addressed a letter to the Secretary of the Lord Lieutenant, respectfully appealing against the patent. This was succeeded by a second letter, directed to the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury, informing them that the money was not needed. But to these letters no attention was paid. Meanwhile the mint of Wood was hard at work. Several cargoes of the coins had already been imported and were in circulation at the ports. Each week brought with it a fresh influx. The tradespeople, well aware of the prejudice against the coins, were in the greatest per-

plexity. If they accepted them, they accepted what might very possibly turn to dross in their hands; if they refused them, they must either lose custom or receive payment in a coinage no longer current.

In August, 1723, the Lord Lieutenant arrived, and a few weeks afterwards Parliament met. The greatest excitement prevailed in both Houses. Opinions were divided; but it was resolved at last to appeal against the patent. On September 23 an Address to the King was voted by the Commons. The Lords followed with a similar Address on the 28th. It was asserted that Wood had been guilty of fraud and deceit; that he had infringed the terms of the patent, both in the quantity and in the quality of the coin; and that the circulation of his coinage would be highly prejudicial to the revenue, and destructive to the commerce of Ireland. Walpole had the good sense to see that these Addresses could not with safety be treated as the previous appeals had been treated, and the two Houses were informed, in courteous and conciliatory terms, that the matter would receive His Majesty's most careful consideration. And the promise was kept. A Committee of the Privy Council was specially convened. Their sittings extended over many weeks, and it is abundantly clear that they performed their duties with scrupulous conscientiousness. Walpole now hoped, and hoped not without reason, that Ireland would be pacified, or that, at the worst, a compromise, which would save the Ministry from the humiliation of having to withdraw the patent, could be arranged. But, before the Committee could arrive at any conclusion, an event had occurred which dashed all these hopes to the ground.

Up to this point Swift appears to have remained passive, though it is highly probable that he had contributed largely to the pasquinade and broadsheet literature which had never ceased, since the announcement of Wood's patent, to pour forth each week from the public press. He was well aware that, of all the expedients which can be devised for keeping up popular irritation, and for impressing on the will of many the will of one, these trifles are the most efficacious. They had served his turn before, and nothing is less likely than that he neglected them now. It is certain that after the publication of the first Drapier Letter he was a voluminous contributor to what he has himself designated as Grub Street literature. However that may be, he commenced in the summer of 1724 that famous series of Letters which, if they are to be estimated by the effect they produced, must be allowed the first place in political literature. The opening Letter is a model of the art which lies in the concealment of art. There cannot be the smallest doubt that Swift designed from the very beginning to proceed from the discomfiture of Wood to the resuscitation of Ireland, and on in regular progression to the vindication of Irish independence. But of this there is no indication in the first Letter. It is simply an appeal purporting to emanate from one M. B., a draper, or, as Swift chooses to spell it, drapier, of Dublin, to the lower and middle classes, calling on them to have nothing to do with the farthings and halfpence of Wood. 'Brethren, friends, countrymen, and fellow-subjects,' so runs the opening sentence, 'what I intend now to say to you is, next to your duty to God, and the care of your salvation, of the

greatest concern to yourselves and your children, your bread and clothing and every common necessary of life entirely depend upon it.' In a style pitched studiously in the lowest key, and with the sort of reasoning that comes home to the dullest and most illiterate of the vulgar, the Drapier then points out to his countrymen that the value of money is determined by its intrinsic value; that the intrinsic value of Wood's coins was at least six parts in seven below sterling; and that the man who was fool enough to accept payment in them must to a certainty lose more than tenpence in every shilling. 'If,' he said, 'you accept the money, the kingdom is undone, and every poor man in it is undone.' The halfpence would run about like the plague and destroy every one who laid his hand upon them. 'Therefore, my friends, stand to it one and all; refuse this filthy trash.' On the monstrous exaggerations and palpable sophistry by which these assertions were supported it would be mere waste of words to comment. The object which Swift sought to attain was an object the legitimacy of which admits of no question, and, if he sought its attainment by the only means which fortune had placed at his disposal, who can blame him? It will not be disputed that the concession of the patent had been a scandalous job; that in conferring it without consulting the Irish Government England had been guilty of grossly insulting the subjects of that Government; that the profits which Wood anticipated were such as could scarcely be compatible with a strict adherence to the terms of his contract; and that, as a matter of fact, some of his coins were, in spite of the risk incurred by detection,

found on examination to be below the stipulated value.¹

The publication of the Letter was as well-timed as the skill with which it was written was consummate. It appeared at a moment when the social and political atmosphere was in the highest possible state of inflammability, and ready at any moment to burst into flame. It was the spark which ignited it, and the explosion was terrific. From Cork to Londonderry, from Galway to Dublin, Ireland was in a blaze. The feuds which had for years been raging between party and party, between sect and sect, between caste and caste, were suspended, and the whole country responded as one man to the appeal of the Drapier. For the first time in Irish history the Celt and the Saxon had a common bond. For once the Whig joined hand with the Tory. For once the same sentiment animated the Episcopalian and the Papist, the Presbyterian and the New Lighter, the Hanoverian and the Jacobite.²

On August 4 appeared a second Letter from the Drapier. In substance it is like the first, partly a philippic and partly an appeal, but it is a philippic infinitely more savage and scathing, it is an appeal in a higher and more passionate strain. This Letter was addressed to Harding, the printer, in consequence

¹ That Sir Isaac Newton tested the coins and found them satisfactory is nothing to the point, for the samples tested by him were only those struck between March, 1723, and March, 1724, which were never uttered in Ireland (Monck Mason, *Annals*, p. 340). There were, in fact, four varieties struck. Ruding (*Annals of the Coinage*, iii. 476) says that, if the coinage was uniformly of the same kind as the worst samples, the loss to Ireland would have been 82,000*l*.

² Boulter to the Duke of Newcastle, *Letters*, i. 7.

of a paragraph which had three days before appeared in his newspaper. The paragraph was to the effect that the Privy Council, whose decision had not as yet been officially announced, had in their Report recommended a compromise. The report of Sir Isaac Newton, who, as Master of the Mint, had been instructed to test the coins, had, it was stated, been favourable to Wood. Wood, therefore, was to retain the right of mintage, but, in deference to public feeling in Ireland, the amount of the sum to be coined by him was to be reduced from a hundred and eight thousand pounds to forty thousand. The justice and reasonableness of this proposal—a proposal which had emanated from Wood himself—must have been as obvious then as it is obvious now. But Swift saw at once that, if the compromise were accepted, the victory, though nominally on the side of Ireland, would in reality be on the side of England. In essence England had conceded nothing. Wood still retained his obnoxious prerogative; England still assumed the right of conferring that prerogative. A particular evil had been lightened, but the greater evil, the evil principle, remained. Nor was this all. Nothing can be more certain than that it was Swift's design from the very beginning to make the controversy with Wood the basis of far more extensive operations.¹ It

¹ The letter which he addressed to Lord Carteret in April, 1724, just after Carteret had been appointed Lord Lieutenant, might at first sight seem to favour the view that his chief object was what it appeared to be, the withdrawal of the obnoxious coin. But the letter was evidently written to ingratiate himself, or at least to bring himself into correspondence, with Carteret, in whom he had many reasons for supposing that he might find a coadjutor in the general cause of Irish reform. He must have known perfectly well that no

had furnished him with the means of waking Ireland from long lethargy into fiery life. He looked to it to furnish him with the means of elevating her from servitude to independence, from ignominy to honour. His only fear was lest the spirit which he had kindled should burn itself out or be prematurely quenched. And of this he must have felt that there was some danger, when it was announced that England had given way much more than it was expected she would give way, and much more than she had ever given way before. In his second Letter, therefore, written to prepare his readers for the official announcement of the Report, he treats the proffered compromise with indignant disdain, and, with a skill which would have done honour to Demosthenes, tears the whole case of his opponents into shreds before they had had the opportunity of unfolding it. The patent has been reduced to forty thousand pounds. Of what avail is that? If there was not one farthing of copper change in the whole of Ireland, five-and-twenty thousand pounds' worth would amply suffice. The coins have been tested at the Royal Mint, and it has been pronounced by the assayers that Wood has fulfilled his contract. What has been tested? A dozen or two selected for the purpose by Wood. And what contract has he fulfilled—with whom has it been made? With the Parliament or people of Ireland? But they detest, abhor, reject it as fraudulent and corrupt. Then he goes on to deal with the proposals which Wood, fearing that his patent might be altogether withdrawn, had himself offered: namely, that he private application from a private man would at that moment carry any weight with it in a matter of public policy.

would not coin more than the seventeen thousand pounds which he had already coined unless the exigencies of trade required it ; that he would be willing to take manufactures in exchange for his coin ; and that he would not oblige anyone to receive more than fivepence halfpenny at one payment.

‘ Good God ! ’ exclaims the Drapier, ‘ who are this wretch’s advisers ? Who are his supporters, abettors, encouragers, or sharers ? Mr. Wood will oblige me to take fivepence halfpenny of his brass in every payment. And I will shoot Mr. Wood and his deputies, like highwaymen or housebreakers, if they dare to force one farthing of their coin on me in the payment of a hundred pounds. It is no loss of honour to submit to the lion, but who with the figure of a man can think with patience of being devoured alive by a rat ? ’

He then proceeds to recommend the tactics which have been practised so effectually in our own day. ‘ Let us mark and observe those who presume to offer these halfpence in payment. Let their names and places of abode be made public, that every one may beware of them as betrayers of their country and confederates with Mr. Wood.’

A few days afterwards the Report arrived, and a third Letter, with the now famous signature attached to it, followed almost immediately. It was addressed to the nobility and gentry, as its predecessors had been addressed to the lower and middle classes. In effect it repeats, but repeats more emphatically and at greater length, what he had commented on in the second Letter—the mendacity and impudence of Wood, and of the witnesses who had, in the inquiry before the Privy Council, borne testimony in Wood’s favour ; the cruelty and illegality of the patent ; the scandalous circumstances under which it had

been obtained ; the still more scandalous circumstances under which it had been executed ; the intrinsic worthlessness of the coins ; the tyranny and injustice of the mother-country. But the matter which forms the staple of the Letter is not the matter which gives the Letter its distinctive character. It is here that we catch for the first time unmistakable glimpses of Swift's ultimate design. The words of the fourteenth paragraph could have left the English Government in little doubt of the turn which the controversy was about to take. 'Were not the people of Ireland,' asks the Drapier, 'born as free as those of England ? How have they perfected their freedom ? Are not they subjects of the same King ? Am I a freeman in England, and do I become a slave in six hours by crossing the Channel ?' In another passage he adverts to some of the principal political grievances of the kingdom, sarcastically remarking that a people whose loyalty had been proof against so many attempts to shake it was surely entitled to as much consideration on the part of the Crown as a people whose loyalty had not always been above suspicion. The remark was as pointed as it was just. The events of 1715 and 1722 had left a deep stain on the loyalty of England, but Ireland had never wavered in her fidelity to the House of Hanover.

But it was not simply in the character of the Drapier that Swift was scattering his firebrands. In every form which political literature can assume, from ribald songs roared out to thieves and harlots over their gin, to satires, lampoons, and disquisitions which infected with the popular madness the Common Room of Trinity and the drawing-rooms of College

Green and Grafton Street, he sought to fan tumult into rebellion.¹ He even brought the matter into the pulpit. In a sermon which Burke afterwards described as 'containing the best motives to patriotism which were ever delivered in so small a compass,' the Dean called on his brethren to remember that next to their duty to their Creator came their duty to themselves and to their fellow-citizens, and that, as duty and religion bound them to resist what was evil and mischievous, so duty and religion bound them to be as one man against Wood and Wood's upholders.²

Meanwhile meetings were held, clubs were formed, petitions and addresses came pouring in. The Grand Jury and the inhabitants of the Liberty of St. Patrick's drew up a resolution formally announcing that they would neither receive nor tender payment in Wood's coins. The butchers passed a resolution to the same effect; the brewers followed; and at last the very newsboys, or, as they were then called, the 'flying stationers,' issued a manifesto against the coins. Nor was it in the capital only that these bold proceedings were taking place. In many of the provincial towns similar resolutions were passed, and the excitement in Cork and Waterford was uncontrollable.

It was now apparent even to Walpole that some decisive step must be taken. The Duke of Grafton, whose want of tact, whose fretful and choleric temper, and whose haughty and unconciliating manners, rendered him peculiarly ill-fitted for his position, was recalled, and the Minister appointed to succeed him

¹ For samples of these see Scott's *Swift*, vii. 295-304; x. 468-489.

² Sermon xii.—*On Doing Good*.

was Carteret. The appointment justly excited great surprise. Walpole and Carteret had long been in open enmity. During several sessions it had been Carteret's chief object to perplex and annoy his rival; and he was suspected, and suspected with reason, of having fomented the disturbances which he was now being sent out to quell. With the Lord Chancellor Midleton, and with the Lord Chancellor's relatives the Brodricks, he had certainly been in friendly communication; and of all the opponents of the patent, Midleton and the Brodricks had, next to Swift, been the most pertinacious. Coxe tells us that it was Carteret who informed Alan Brodrick of the secret arrangement between Wood and the Duchess of Kendal with regard to the profits of the patent, a scandal which the malcontents had turned to great account.¹ Thus in a private capacity he had been in league with those whom in his official capacity he was bound to regard as opponents.

In this singular position Carteret landed in Ireland towards the end of October, with general instructions and with ample powers. He was to soothe or coerce, to yield or resist, as the exigencies of the crisis demanded. If on inquiry it should seem expedient to suspend the patent, the patent was to be suspended; if he thought it desirable to go further and withdraw it altogether, it was to be withdrawn. But he had scarcely time to take the oaths before new and alarming complications arose. On October 23 appeared the fourth Drapier Letter. In this discourse Swift threw off all disguise. The question of the

¹ *Memoirs of Walpole*, i. 222.

patent is here subordinated to the far more important question of the nature of the relations between Ireland and England. Contemptuously dismissing a recent protest of Wood as 'the last howl of a dog who had been dissected alive,' he goes on to assert that the Royal Prerogative, the power on which, during the whole struggle with Wood, so much stress had been laid, was as limited in Ireland as it was in the mother-country. He comments bitterly on the so-called dependency of Ireland, 'as if the people of Ireland are in some sort of slavery or dependence different from those of England.' Dependent they are, but they are dependent in the same sense, and in the same sense only, as the people of England are dependent—dependent on a monarchy common to both. True it unhappily is, that the Parliaments of England have sometimes assumed the power of binding Ireland by laws enacted by themselves, but it has been in defiance of justice, in defiance of reason, in defiance of the opposition of 'the greatest patriots and best Whigs in England.' He denounces the injustice of filling all posts of trust and emolument with Englishmen, instead of conferring them, as they ought to be conferred, on Irishmen. But the remedy, he said, was in their own hands; and in two sentences, which vibrated through the whole kingdom, he suggested it: 'By the laws of God, of nature, of nations, and of your country, you are and ought to be as free a people as your brethren in England.' Again: 'All government without the consent of the governed is the very definition of slavery'—'though,' he added, with bitter sarcasm, 'eleven men well armed will certainly subdue one single man in his shirt.' It

was impossible for the Lord Lieutenant to allow this to pass. A Proclamation was issued describing the Letter as wicked and malicious, and offering a reward of three hundred pounds to any one who would discover the author. Harding, the printer of it, was arrested and thrown into prison.

Up to this point Swift had, as an individual, kept studiously in the background. He now came prominently forward. A day or two before the Proclamation he addressed, it would seem privately, a letter to the Lord Chancellor Middleton, vindicating the Drapier, and urging the importance of resisting to the utmost the imposition of Wood's coinage.¹ On the day succeeding the Proclamation he presented himself at the levee of the Lord Lieutenant, and, forcing his way into the presence of Carteret, sternly upbraided him with what he had done. 'Your Excellency has,' he thundered out with a voice and manner which struck the whole assembly dumb with amazement, 'given us a noble specimen of what this devoted nation has to hope for from your government.' He then burst out into a torrent of invectives against the Proclamation, the arrest of Harding, and the protection given to the patent. To a man in Carteret's position such a scene must have been sufficiently embarrassing. But he was too accomplished a diplomatist to betray either surprise or anger. He listened with great composure and urbanity to all Swift had to say, and then with a bow and a smile gave him his answer in an exquisitely felicitous quotation from Virgil:—

¹ This is printed by Scott as the sixth Drapier Letter, but he has put it out of its place; it should succeed in order the fourth.

Res dura et regni novitas me talia cogunt
Moliri.

So terminated this strange interview.

And now the struggle with England reached its climax; the Bill against Harding was about to be presented to the Grand Jury. On its rejection hung the hopes of the patriots; on its acceptance hung the hopes of the Government. In an admirable address Swift calmly and solemnly explained to his fellow-citizens the momentous issues which some of them would shortly be called upon to try.¹ The important day arrived. What followed was what every one anticipated would follow—the Bill was thrown out. But the Chief Justice Whitshed, acting as he had acted on a former occasion, concluded a scene which would have disgraced Scroggs by dissolving the jury. This insane measure served only to swell the triumph of the patriots. Another jury was immediately summoned. The Bill against Harding was again ignored, and, to complete the discomfiture of the Government, the rejection of the Bill was coupled with a formal vindication of the Drapier. From this moment the battle was virtually won—the Drapier had triumphed, and Swift ruled Ireland. But nine troubled months had yet to pass before victory definitely declared itself. In the interval the voice of the Drapier was heard once more. Swift's object in the sixth Letter, which was addressed to Lord Molesworth, appears to have been twofold—to urge again the necessity of standing firm against the coinage, and to bring into prominence, though with cautious insinuation, all that had in the former

¹ *Seasonable Advice to the Grand Jury.*

Letters been advanced on the general question of Ireland's rights and England's duties. The struggle between dignity and expediency was a severe one. At last England yielded. 'I have His Majesty's commands to acquaint you that an entire end is put to the patent formerly granted to Mr. Wood' were the words in which, at the commencement of the autumn session of 1725, the Viceroy announced to Ireland that the greatest victory she had ever won had been gained.

The public joy knew no bounds. In a few hours Dublin presented the appearance of a vast jubilee. In a few days there was scarcely a town or a village in Ireland which was not beside itself with exultation. The whole island rang with the praises of the Drapier. It was the Drapier, they cried, who had saved them, it was the Drapier who had taught them to be patriots. Had Swift rescued the country from some overwhelming calamity, had he done all and more than all that the Oedipus of story is fabled to have done for the city of Amphion, popular gratitude could not have gone further. Medals were struck in his honour. A club, the professed object of which was to perpetuate his fame, was formed. His portrait stamped on medallions, or woven on handkerchiefs, was the ornament most cherished by both sexes. When he appeared in the streets all heads were uncovered. If for the first time he visited a town, it was usual for the Corporation to receive him with public honours. Each year, as his birthday came round, it was celebrated with tumultuous festivity. 'He became,' says Orrery, 'the idol of the people of Ireland to a degree of devotion that in the most superstitious country

scarcely any idol ever attained.' 'Spirit of Swift!' exclaimed Grattan on that memorable day when he brought forward his Declaration of Legislative Independence, 'Spirit of Swift! your genius has prevailed; Ireland is now a nation.' Even now no true Irishman ever pronounces his name without reverence.

II

But it was not as a political agitator only that Swift sought to attain his object. Nothing, he believed, contributed more to the degradation and wretchedness of the country than the state of the Church. As a churchman his own convictions and principles had never wavered. From the very first he had attached himself to the High Church party; from the very first he had regarded the Low Church party not merely with suspicion but with abhorrence. Their latitudinarian opinions, the indulgence with which they were inclined to treat the Nonconformists, their close alliance with the clique of the Castle, their readiness on every occasion to play into the hands of that clique; and to sacrifice the interests of the Church to the interests of a faction largely composed of men at open enmity with the Church--all this he had long beheld with indignation and alarm. On arriving in Ireland he found himself in the midst of this obnoxious party. For a while, however, he contented himself with standing aloof and remaining passive. But between 1714 and 1720 it became clearly apparent that it was the intention of the Whig Ministry in England to make the Church of Ireland subservient to the English Government. This was to be

accomplished by the gradual elimination of all High Churchmen and of all natives from offices of trust and emolument. Regularly, as each see or as each deanery fell vacant, it was conferred on some member of the Low Church party in England, selected not because he possessed any moral or intellectual qualification for the post, but because his patrons could depend on his obsequious compliance with their designs. Against this system of preferment, and against the whole body of those who thus obtained preferment, Swift waged incessant war. If they endeavoured to aggrandise themselves, if they essayed in any way to oppress the inferior clergy, or to extend the bounds of episcopal authority, he was in the arena in a moment. Thus in 1723 he opposed an attempt to enlarge the power of the bishops in letting leases.¹ Thus in 1733 he succeeded in inducing the Lower House to throw out the Residence Bill and the Division Bill.² Individually and as a body they were the constant theme now of his contemptuous mockery and now of his furious abuse. They are

Pastors of the ravenous breed,
Who come to fleece the flocks and not to feed,

‘Anti-Christian rooks,’ ‘new Iscariots,’ and the like. But he could not be said to agree with those who blamed the Court for these appointments. Excellent and moral men had, he was satisfied, been selected to fill every vacancy. ‘But it unfortunately and uni-

¹ See the tract *Some Arguments against enlarging the Power of Bishops in letting Leases*, Scott, viii. 417.

² See the two tracts, *On the Bill for the Clergy residing on their Livings*, and *Considerations upon two Bills sent down from the House of Lords, &c.*, Scott, ix. 5 and 13.

formly happened that, as these worthy divines crossed Hounslow Heath on their road to Ireland to take possession of their bishopricks, they have been regularly robbed and murdered by the highwaymen frequenting that common, who seize upon their robes and patents, come over to Ireland, and are consecrated bishops in their stead.' The hatred which Swift bore to the Whig hierarchy of Ireland is perfectly explicable on political and ecclesiastical grounds, but we may perhaps suspect that feelings less creditable to him entered into its composition. It was hardly in human nature—it was certainly not in his nature—to forget that men, immeasurably his inferiors in parts and character, had outstripped him in the race of honour.

While he was thus defending the Church from enemies from within—for such he considered these prelates—he was equally indefatigable in defending her from enemies from without. It was owing to his efforts that the Modus Bill—a Bill which would, by commuting the tithe upon hemp and flax for a fixed sum, have benefited the laity at the expense of the clergy—was defeated.¹ It was an attempt on the part of the Commons and the landlords to rob the Church of the tithe of agistment that inspired the last and most furious of his satires. But nothing excited his indignation more than the indulgence extended to the Nonconformists. Of all the enemies of the Established Church they were, in his eyes, the most odious and the most formidable. It was no secret that the largest and most influential sect among them

¹ See the tract *Some Reasons Against the Bill for settling the Tithe of Hemp and Flax by a Modus*, Scott, ix. 29.

aimed at nothing less than the subversion of Episcopacy. In numbers these sectaries already equalled the Episcopalian Protestants; in activity and zeal they were far superior to them. Indeed, Swift firmly believed that it was the Test Act, and the Test Act only, which stood between the Church and her destroyers. But the Whigs argued that the danger came not from the Nonconformists but from the Papists. The struggle, they said, lay not between Protestantism and Protestantism, but between Protestantism and Roman Catholicism; and the extension of indulgences to the sectaries would, they thought, have the effect of uniting the Protestants, without distinction of sect, against the common enemy. To this Swift replied that there was little to fear from the Papists. The Papists had been reduced to unimportance and impotence by the Penal Laws; they were as inconsiderable in point of power as women and children. Popery was, no doubt, a more portentous monster than Presbyterianism, as a lion is stronger and larger than a cat; but, he adds in one of those happy and witty illustrations with which his pamphlets abound, 'if a man were to have his choice, either a lion at his foot bound fast with three or four chains, his teeth drawn, and his claws pared to the quick, or an angry cat in full liberty at his throat, he would take no long time to determine.' For this reason he not only opposed all attempts to repeal the Test Act, but all attempts to relax its stringency. And the pamphlets and verses produced by him in the course of this long controversy are among the ablest and most entertaining of his minor writings.¹

¹ To this question I shall have to return, but it may be well to

Not less strenuous were his attempts to awaken in the Church itself the spirit of resistance and reform. Among the Bishops there was a small minority by no means favourably disposed towards the policy of England. The Toleration Act of 1719 had alarmed them. The obvious intention of the English Government to degrade the Irish Church into a mere instrument of political dominion had disgusted them. With this section, at the head of which was King, Archbishop of Dublin, Swift coalesced, and out of this section he laboured to construct a party which should combat the Nonconformists on the one hand and the Hanoverian Hierarchy on the other, which should protest against the systematic exclusion of the Irish clergy from remunerative preferment—which should inaugurate a national Church.

Meanwhile he was doing all in his power to raise the character and improve the condition of the inferior clergy. It was with this object that he wrote in 1720 his admirable *Letter to a Young Clergyman*, and if into the *Essay on the Fates of Clergymen*, drawing on his own bitter experience, he infused more sarcasm than admonition, he gave his brethren much salutary advice. He was a friend, an adviser, an advocate, on whom they could always depend. He defended them against the Bishops; he fought for them against the

enumerate here the chief tracts of Swift on this subject: *The Presbyterian's Plea of Merit, A Narrative of the several Attempts which the Dissenters of Ireland have made for a Repeal of the Test Act, The Advantages proposed by Repealing the Sacramental Test impartially Considered, Queries concerning the Sacramental Test, Reasons humbly Offered to the Parliament of Ireland for Repealing the Test.*

landlords. Many of them owed what preferment they possessed to his generous importunity.¹

It is melancholy to turn from Swift's public to his private life. We open his correspondence, and we find abundant proof that, so far from having derived any gratification either from his recent triumph or from the discharge of duty, he continued to be, what in truth he had long been, the most wretched, the most discontented, the most solitary of men. The very name of the country for which he had done so much was odious to him. He scarcely ever referred either to the Englishry or to the native Irish but with some epithet indicative of loathing and contempt. In the English rule he saw the embodiment of all that is most detestable in power; in the condition of his compatriots, the embodiment of all that is most despicable in submission. 'I am sitting,' he writes in one of his letters, 'like a toad in the corner of my great house, with a perfect hatred of all public actions and persons.' Though his active benevolence never slumbered, and though he still felt, he says, affection for particular individuals, his feelings towards humanity in general were those of a man in whom misanthropy was beginning to border on monomania. He also complains of his broken health, of his sleepless nights, of his solitude in the midst of acquaintances, of his enforced residence in a country which he abhorred, of his banish-

¹ See particularly his letter to Lady Betty Germaine, June 15, 1736, and to Carteret, July, 1725. In the interests of the Irish clergy he did all in his power to counteract the policy of Boulter in conferring the Church patronage on Englishmen. He was not aware how powerless Carteret, who would always have favoured Swift's nominees, really was.

ment from those in whose society he had found the burden of existence less intolerable. 'I very well know,' he writes to Pope, 'to whom I would give the first places in my friendship, but they are not in the way. I am condemned to another scene, and therefore I distribute it in pennyworths to those about me who displease me least.' He would do the same, he said, to his fellow-prisoners, if he were condemned to jail.

Among those 'who displeased him least' was a lazy, good-natured, scholarly, and accomplished Irishman named Sheridan. They rode and walked together; they read the Greek and Latin poets together; they bandied nonsense in verse and prose, and became at last inseparable companions. Poor Sheridan, who had a large family, was always in difficulties. He had set up a private school in Dublin, but his improvidence and slovenly habits had prevented him from doing justice to his great abilities as a teacher, and he had got heavily into debt. Then Swift had induced the Lord Primate Lindsay to offer him the richly endowed school of Armagh, but this offer Sheridan most foolishly declined. At last, again through Swift's recommendation, Carteret appointed him one of the Lord Lieutenant's Chaplains, and presented him with a small living near Cork. And now all seemed well. He went up to Cork to be inducted into the living, and, good-naturedly undertaking to preach for a brother-clergyman, without observing that the day on which he was preaching was the anniversary of the accession of the House of Hanover, the unhappy man chose for his text, 'Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.' The congregation were amazed one Richard Tighe,

a zealous Hanoverian, hurried immediately off to Dublin, reported the matter to the Lord Lieutenant, and Sheridan's name was struck off the list of the Royal Chaplains.¹

In his vacations Sheridan was in the habit of retiring with his family to a small country house which he possessed at Quilca, about seven miles from Kells. This house he placed at the disposal of Swift, and here, generally accompanied by Mrs. Dingley and Stella, Swift frequently resided. Of the life he led here, and of the house and its occupants, he has left a most amusing description. He began in April, 1724, *The Blunders, Deficiencies, and Distresses of Quilca, to be continued if due encouragement be given.* It forms, as Scott observes, no bad supplement to Swift's pictures of Ireland.

¹ Swift vowed that he would make Tighe smart for this, and never ceased to persecute him, whether alive or dead, with satire. And he kept his vow. Of his lampoons, among the bitterest and more scathing are those on Tighe. See *Mad Mullinix and Timothy, Tim and the Fables, Tom and Dick, Clad all in White, Dick a Maggot, Dick's Variety, &c.* (Scott's *Swift*, vol. x.).

CHAPTER VIII

VISIT TO ENGLAND

FOR some time his old friends had been importuning him to pay a visit to England. Though Atterbury was in exile, and death had removed Oxford, Parnell, and Prior, the Scriblerus Club could still muster a goodly company. Bolingbroke, after many vicissitudes, was again on English soil. Pope, who had achieved a reputation second to no poet in Europe, had settled at Twickenham, and was gradually gathering round him that splendid society on which his genius has shed additional lustre. Arbuthnot,

Social, cheerful, and serene,
And just as rich as when he served a queen,

had lost nothing of the wit, the humour, the wisdom, the humanity, which had sixteen years before won the hearts of all who knew him. And not less importunate were those many other friends in whose mansions he had been a welcome guest when he sat each week among the Brethren. But it was long before he could make up his mind to cross the Channel, and it was not till the spring of 1726 that he found himself once more in London.

During this visit occurred two memorable events: the interview with Walpole, and the publication of

Gulliver's Travels. No incident in Swift's biography has been so grossly misrepresented as his connection with Walpole. It was whispered at the time that he had sold himself to the Court, and that the price of his apostasy was to be high ecclesiastical preferment. It was subsequently reported that he had merely offered to turn renegade; for that Walpole, having discovered from an intercepted letter that he was playing a double part, declined to have any dealings with him.¹ Chesterfield confidently asserted that

¹ A very circumstantial version of this story is given in a letter dated April 23, 1806, from Edward Roberts, Deputy Clerk of the Pells, to his son Barrè Charles Roberts, which is so curious that I will transcribe it: "You ask me about the anecdote which Sir Edward Walpole told me he was privy to respecting his father and Swift. Lord Peterborough, the common friend of both these personages, persuaded Sir Robert to take Swift into his favour and to promote him in England, urging that Swift had seen the folly of his adherence to Tory principles, and was become a Whig and a friend to the reigning family and to Sir Robert's administration; that he found himself buried alive in Ireland and wished to pass his remaining days with English preferment on English ground. After frequent importunities Sir Robert consented to see Swift: he came from Ireland and was brought by Lord Peterborough to dine at Chelsea. His manner was very captivating and full of respect to Sir Robert, and completely imposing on Lord Chesterfield. After dinner Sir Robert retired to his closet and sent for Lord Peterborough, who entered full of joy at Swift's demeanour. This was soon done away with. Sir Robert said: "You see, my lord, how highly I stand in the Dean's favour." "Yes," replied Lord Peterborough, "and I am confident he means as he speaks." Sir Robert proceeded: "In my situation, assailed as I am by secret enemies, I hold it my duty, and for the King's benefit, to watch correspondence. This letter I caused to be stopped at the post-office and read it." It was a letter of Swift, I think, to Arbuthnot, saying that Sir Robert had consented to receive him, that he knew that, as no flattery was too gross for Sir Robert, he should receive plenty, and added that he should soon have the rascal in his clutches. . . . I mentioned this remark to old Sheridan, who was outrageous at hearing it. I mentioned Sheridan's disbelief to Sir Edward, who was

Swift had offered his services to the Ministry, and that Walpole had rejected the offer.¹ Now the facts of the case are simply these. Shortly after the Dean's arrival in London, Walpole, who was probably acquainted with him, and who was certainly acquainted with many of his friends, invited him with other guests to a dinner party at Chelsea. It chanced that not long before a libel had appeared, in which the character of the First Minister had been very severely handled. And that libel Walpole had attributed, but attributed erroneously, to Gay. Poor Gay had in consequence not only made an enemy of Walpole, but, what was still more serious, had lost caste at Leicester House. It was, therefore, with an allusion to Gay's misadventure that Swift took occasion to observe at Walpole's table that, 'when great Ministers heard an ill thing of a private person who expected some favour, although they were afterwards convinced that the person was innocent, yet they would never be reconciled.'² The words were ambiguous, though Walpole was probably well aware that when Swift uttered them he was referring not to himself but to Gay. He affected, however, to believe that Swift was referring to himself, and he appears to have circulated a

almost equally outrageous, and applied in my hearing to his brother Horace to confirm it. But Horace, for reasons best known to himself, had a convenient want of recollection.'—*Letters and Miscellaneous Papers*, by Barré Charles Roberts, Student of Christchurch. See also Colton's *Lacon*, dxxx.

¹ Communicated to Sheridan by Clarke, one of the Fellows of Trinity College, who said he had it from Chesterfield.—*Life of Swift*, p. 258.

² See Swift's account of this in his letter to Lady Betty Germaine, Jan. 8, 1733 (Scott, xviii. 127).

report that the Dean had been apologising—in other words, had been currying favour with him. It is just possible, of course, that Walpole may for the moment have misinterpreted Swift's meaning. If he did so, he was soon undeceived. At the end of April, Swift had a second interview. It had been granted at the request of Peterborough, and it was granted that Swift might have an opportunity of discussing the affairs of Ireland. What passed on this occasion is partly a matter of certainty and partly a matter of conjecture almost as conclusive as certainty.¹ That Walpole frankly communicated his views with regard to the relations between England and Ireland; that these views were diametrically opposed to Swift's; that Swift, seeing that debate was useless, said very much less than he designed to say; and that the two men parted, if not exactly in enmity, at least with no friendly feelings, we know definitely from Swift's correspondence. What seem to place it beyond doubt that Walpole sought in the course of the interview to deal with Swift as he was in the habit of dealing with men whom it was his policy to conciliate, are two passages in Swift's correspondence. 'I have had,' he writes to Sheridan,² 'the fairest offer made me of a settlement here that one can imagine, within twelve miles of London, and in the midst of my friends; but I am too old for new schemes, and especially such as would bridle me in my freedom.' Again, he says in a letter to Stopford,³ referring to the see of Cloyne, that it was not offered him, and would not

¹ See, for what passed at this interview, Swift to Peterborough, April 28, 1726 (Scott, xvii. 68).

² July 8, 1726.

³ July 20, 1726.

have been accepted by him 'except under conditions which would never have been granted;' adding, 'I absolutely broke with the First Minister, and have never seen him since.' The inference is obvious. Walpole, well aware of Swift's wish to settle in England, was disposed to turn that wish to account. In all probability he offered what Swift mentions to Sheridan without imposing conditions other than those implied conditions which men who accept favours from others spontaneously hold to be binding. It was no doubt hinted at the same time, vaguely but intelligibly, that higher preferment was in reserve if higher preferment should be earned; and to this Swift probably refers when he speaks of conditions which would never have been granted. But, whatever interpretation may be placed on Swift's words, whatever obscurity may still cloud this much-discussed passage in his life, one thing is clear: he never for a moment allowed self-interest to weigh against duty and principle. It was as the representative advocate of Irish reform that he sought an interview with Walpole. It was because Walpole declined to move in Irish reform that he broke with him and saw him no more.

Meanwhile he was putting the finishing touches to that immortal satire, the fame of which has thrown all his other writings into the shade. At what precise time he commenced the composition of *Gulliver* is not known. It was originally designed to form a portion of the work projected by the Scriblerus Club in 1714; and, if it was not commenced then, it was in all probability commenced shortly afterwards. He had certainly made some progress in it

as early as the winter of 1721, for we find allusion to it in a letter of Bolingbroke's dated January, 1721, and in a letter of Miss Vanhomrigh's, undated, but written probably about the same time. There can be little doubt, therefore, that the work was far advanced before his visit to Quilea at the end of 1724, and we know from his correspondence that during that visit—a visit which extended over the greater part of a year—the manuscript was seldom out of his hands. Between that date and the date of publication it appears to have undergone repeated revisions. Many passages, for example, must almost certainly have been inserted during his residence in England. Indeed, I am inclined to suspect that it was to his residence in England that the satire owed much of its local colouring. Nor is it at all surprising that *Gulliver* should have occupied Swift's thoughts for many years, and should have been the result of patient and protracted labour. It would be easy to point to fictions which in wealth of imagination and fancy, in humour, in wit, in originality, would suffer nothing from comparison with Swift's masterpiece. Such in ancient times would be the *Birds* and the *True Art of Writing History*; such, in later times, would be the romances of Rabelais and Cervantes. But what distinguishes Swift's satire from all other works of the same class is not merely its comprehensiveness and intensity, but its exact and elaborate propriety. The skill with which every incident, nay, almost every allusion, in a narrative as rich in incident as the *Travels of Pinto*, and as minutely particular as the *Journal of the Plague*, is invested with satirical significance, is little short of marvellous. From the com-

mencement to the end there is nothing superfluous, and there is nothing irrelevant. The merest trifle has its point. Where the satire is not general, it is personal and local; where the analogies are not to be found in the vices and follies common to all ages, they are to be found in the social and political history of Swift's own time. But the fiction has been framed with such nice ingenuity, that the allegory blends what is ephemeral with what is universal; and a satire which is on the one hand as wide as humanity, is on the other hand as local and particular as the *History of John Bull* or *The Satyre Menippée*. Regarded simply as a romance, the work is not less finished. De Morgan has pointed out the scrupulous accuracy with which in the two first voyages the scale of proportions is adjusted and maintained. So artfully, he observes, has Swift guarded against the possibility of discrepancy, that he has taken care to baffle mathematical scrutiny by avoiding any statement which would furnish a standard for exact calculation. And this minute diligence, this subtle skill, is manifest in the delineation of the hero Gulliver, who is not merely the ironical embodiment of Swift himself, but a portrait as true to life as Bowling or Trunnion—in the style, which is at once a parody of the style of the old voyagers, and a style in itself of a high order of intrinsic excellence—in the fine and delicate touches, which give to incidents, in themselves monstrously extravagant, so much verisimilitude, that as we follow the story we are almost cheated into believing it. In all works of a similar kind every incident is, as Scott well observes, a new demand upon the patience and credulity of the reader. In Swift's

romance, as soon as the first shock of incredulity is over, the process of illusion is uninterrupted. If the premises of the fiction be once granted, if the existence of Lilliput and Brobdingnag, of Laputa and Balnibarbi, be postulated, we have before us a narrative as logical as it is consistent and plausible. No writer, indeed, has excelled, or perhaps equalled, Swift in the art of what Aristotle describes as 'deception'—the art, that is to say, of inducing false inference. When, says that great critic, one thing is observed to be constantly accompanied or followed by another, men are apt to conclude that if the latter is or has happened, the former must also be or must have happened. For, knowing the latter to be true, the mind is betrayed into the false inference that the first is true also.¹ Indeed, the skill with which Swift has by a thousand minute strokes contrived to invest the whole work with the semblance of authenticity is inimitable. De Foe himself is not a greater master of the art of realistic effect.

That in the plot of his ingenious story Swift was largely indebted to preceding writers cannot be disputed. The resemblances which exist between passages in *Gulliver* and passages in works with which Swift is known to have been conversant are too close to be mere coincidences. There can be no doubt, for example, that the Academy of Lagado was suggested by the diversions of the courtiers of Queen Quintessence in the fifth book of *Pantagruel*; that the

¹ Οἴονται γὰρ ἄνθρωποι, ὅταν τοῦδι ὄντος τοῦδε ἤ, ἢ γινομένου γίνηται, εἰ τὸ ὑστερόν ἐστι, καὶ τὸ πρότερον εἶναι ἢ γίνεσθαι τοῦτο δέ ἐστι ψεῦδος. διδὸς δὲ, ἂν τὸ πρῶτον ψεῦδος, ἄλλο δ', ὃ τοῦτου ὄντος ἀνάγκη εἶναι ἢ γενέσθαι ἢ προσθεῖναι· διὰ γὰρ τὸ τοῦτο εἶδέναι ἀληθὲς ὄν, παραλογίζεται ἡμῶν ἢ ψυχὴ καὶ τὸ πρῶτον ὡς ὄν.—*Poetics*, xxiv.

attack of the Lilliputians on Gulliver is the counterpart of the attack of the Pygmies on Hercules in the second book of the *Imagines* of Philostratus; that the scenes with the ghosts in Glubbudubdrib are modelled on Lucian; that in the *Voyage to Laputa* the romances of Cyrano de Bergerac were laid under contribution; and that in the *Voyage to the Houyhnhnms* he drew both on the *Arabian Nights* and on Goodwin's *Voyage of Domingo Gonsalez*. It is very likely that the Houyhnhnms were suggested by the forty-fifth chapter of Solinus, and that several strokes for the Yahoos were borrowed from the *Travels* of Sir Thomas Herbert. In his characteristic contention of the superiority of the natural animal to the natural man he has been anticipated by Lucian, whose remarks form an excellent commentary not only on the *Voyage to the Houyhnhnms* but on the poetical supplement of the *Voyage*, the *Beasts' Confession*. 'Tell me,' says Micyllus to the Cock, 'when you were a dog, a horse, a fish, or a frog, how did you like that life?' 'Everyone of these lives,' is the reply, 'is much more quiet than that of man, as the life of animals is within the bound of natural desires and needs, for among them you could never see a usurious horse, or a back-biting frog, or a sophistical jay, or a gourmet gnat, or a pimping cock.'¹ It is certain that Swift was, like Sterne, a diligent student of curious and recondite literature, and that, like Sterne, he was in the habit of turning that knowledge to account. Of this we have a remarkable illustration in the *Voyage to Brobdingnag*. Few readers who know anything of nautical science have not been surprised at the minuteness and accuracy of the technical knowledge displayed by Swift in his account

¹ *Gallus*, xxvii.

of the manœuvres of Gulliver's crew in the storm off the Moluccas. It is curious that Scott, who ought to have known better, describes the passage as merely a farrago of sea-terms put together at random. Now the whole of this passage was taken nearly verbatim from a work then probably circulating only among naval students, and in our time one of the rarest known to bibliographers. This was Samuel Sturmy's *Mariner's Magazine*, published at London in 1679, a copy of which may be found in the British Museum.¹

¹ As this most curious appropriation, to which my attention was directed by a slip in a scrap-book in the British Museum (Press mark 1881, C. 3), has wholly escaped Swift's biographers and critics, and has not, so far as I know, travelled beyond the scrap-book, I will transcribe the original and the copy, giving them in parallel columns:—

SWIFT.

Gulliver, pp. 108, 109.

'Finding it was likely to overblow, we took in our sprit sail, and stood by to hand the fore sail; but, making foul weather, we looked the guns were all fast, and handed the mizen.

'The ship lay very broad off, so we thought it better spooning before the sea than trying or hulling.

'We reefed the fore-sail and set him, and hauled aft the fore-sheet; the helm was hard aweather.

'We belayed the fore down-haul, but the sail was split, and we hauled down the yard, and got the sail into the ship, and unbound all the things clear of it.

STURMY.

Mariner's Magazine, pp. 15, 16, 1684.

'It is like to overblow, take in your sprit sail, stand by to hand the fore sail. . . . We make foul weather, look the guns be all fast, come hand the mizen.

'The ship lies very broad off; it is better spooning before the sea than trying or hulling.

'Go reef the foresail and set him; hawl aft the fore-sheet. The helm is hard aweather.

'Belay the fore down haul. The sail is split: go hawl down the yard and get the sail into the ship and unbind all things clear of it.

But to suppose that these appropriations and reminiscences detract in any way from the essential originality of the work would be as absurd as to tax Shakespeare with stealing *Antony and Cleopatra* from Plutarch, or *Macbeth* from Holinshed. What Swift borrowed was what Shakespeare borrowed, and what the creative artists of all ages have never scrupled to borrow—incidents and hints. The description from Sturmy is to the *Voyage to Brobdingnag* precisely what the progress of Cleopatra in North's *Plutarch* is to the drama of *Antony and Cleopatra*. Indeed, the sum of Swift's obligations to the writers who have been mentioned would, though

SWIFT.

'It was a very fierce storm: the sea broke strange and dangerous.

'We hauled off upon the lanyard of the whip-staff, and helped the man at the helm.

'We could not get down our topmast, but let all stand, because she scudded before the sea very well, and we knew that, the topmast being aloft, the ship was the wholesomer and made better way through the sea, seeing we had sea-room. . . .

'We got the starboard tacks aboard, we cast off our weather-braces and lifts; we set-in the lee-braces and hauled forward by the weather-bowlings, and hauled them tight, and belayed them, and hauled over the mizen-tack to windward, and kept her full and by as near as she would lie.'

STURMY.

'A very fierce storm. The sea breaks strange and dangerous.

'Stand by to haul off above the lanyard of the whip staff and help the man at the helm.

'Shall we get down our top-masts? No, let all stand: she scuds before the sea very well: the topmast being aloft the ship is the wholesomest and maketh better way through the sea, seeing we hav sea room.

'Get the starboard tacks aboard, cast off our weather braces and lifts; set in the lee braces and hawl them taught and belaye them and hawl over the mizen tacks to windward and keep her full and by as near as she would lie.'

considerable, be found on examination to be infinitely less than the obligations of the most original of poets to the novelists of Italy and to the works of contemporaries.

Much has been said about Swift's object in writing *Gulliver*. That object he has himself explained. It was to vex the world. It was to embody in allegory the hatred and disdain with which he personally regarded all nations, all professions, all communities, and especially man, as man in essence is. The key to it is to be found in the sentiments with which his correspondence abounds—in such a sentence as this in a letter to Pope: 'I have ever hated all nations, professions, and communities: and all my love is toward individuals. . . I hate and detest that animal called man, although I heartily love John, Peter, Thomas, and so forth.'¹ Again, to Sheridan: 'You should think and deal with every man as a villain, without calling him so, or flying from him, or valuing him less.'² But he was resolved, he said, to laugh and to cry '*Vive la bagatelle!*' as long as he lived, and the laugh and the jest are embodied in *Gulliver*. It had no moral, no social, no philosophical purpose. It was the mere ebullition of cynicism and misanthropy—a savage *jeu d'esprit*. And as such wise men will regard it. "But there have never been wanting—there probably never will be wanting—critics to place it on a much higher footing. In their eyes it is, as a satire, as an estimate of humanity, and as a criticism of life, as reasonable as it is just." 'Gulliver,' says Hazlitt, 'is an attempt to tear off the mask of imposture from the world, to strip empty pride and grandeur of the

¹ To Pope, Sept. 29, 1725.

² Letter dated Sept. 11, 1725.

imposing air which external circumstances throw around them. And nothing,' he adds, 'but imposture has a right to complain of it.' The answer to this is obvious. Where satire has a moral purpose it is discriminating. It is levelled, not at defects and infirmities which are essential and in nature unremovable, but at defects and infirmities which are unessential, and therefore corrigible. If its immediate object is to punish, its ultimate object is to amend. But this is not the spirit of *Gulliver*. Take the Yahoos. Nothing can be plainer than that these odious and repulsive creatures were designed to be types, not of man, as man when brutalised and degenerate may become, but of man as man is naturally constituted. Take the Struldbrugs. What end could possibly be attained by so shocking an exposure of human infirmities? Juvenal has, it is true, left us a similar delineation; but Juvenal's object was, by teaching men to distinguish between what is desirable and what is not desirable, to guide them to a cheerful and elevated philosophy. Swift's design began and ended in cynical mockery. Again, in the *Voyage to Laputa*, though the local satire—the satire, for example, on the projectors—is pointed and just, the general satire is in the highest degree extravagant and absurd. No one would dispute that intellectual energy may, like the passions, be abused and perverted, and no one would dispute that its abuse and perversion are fair game for the satirist. The inutility of such energy, when misapplied, is, however, no criterion of its utility when properly directed. But Swift makes no distinction. He assumes that, whatever form that energy may take, or to whatever purpose it may be directed,

it is equally futile and equally contemptible. He thus contrives—and contrives most dishonestly—to represent the mathematical and mechanical sciences as despicable and ridiculous, medicine as mere charlatany, and experimental philosophy as an idle and silly delusion—in a word, to pour contempt on those pursuits and faculties on which the intellectual supremacy of man is based. Not less sophistical and disingenuous is the device employed by him in the *Voyage to the Houyhnhnms* for dethroning his kind from their moral supremacy. We here find him assigning to beasts the qualities characteristic of men, and assigning to men the qualities characteristic of beasts, that men may by comparison with beasts be degraded, and that beasts may by comparison with men be exalted. In the brutal passages ridiculing the construction of the human body the satire glances from the creature to the Creator, and is in truth as impious as it is absurd. It is when we compare a work like this with such works as the *Apologie de Raimond Sebond*¹ and the *Essay on Man* that its real character becomes at once apparent. The aim both of Montaigne and of Pope was, like that of Swift, to mortify human pride, to show how little, how despicable, how helpless a creature is man. But their exposure of human infirmities and human errors rested on no ‘basis of misanthropy.’ It was a means to an end—and a noble end. Montaigne’s object was to teach us that all is vain but faith and grace, and that we are to live not by the senses and the reason

¹ It is curious that none of Pope’s commentators should have noticed how greatly he was indebted to this remarkable Essay. Swift has also drawn on it.

but by the spirit. He humbled man that he might exalt him. Pope's object was to teach us the secret of success and happiness by teaching us to know ourselves, and to know our place in the scheme of creation. If he rebuked man's pride, he never forgot man's dignity. If he reminded us that we are below angels, he reminded us that we are above brutes.

But it is necessary to distinguish. What applies to the last two Voyages does not as a rule apply to the first two. In the *Voyage to Lilliput* the satire, which is more local and personal than in any other portion of the work, is, as a rule, as just as it is temperate. If we catch the note of the later strain, it is only in subdued tones here and there. The humour is exquisite, and, though pungent, often playful, and seldom flavoured with the bitterness so characteristic of what follows. In the next Voyage another chord is struck. The satire becomes more general, and has gathered intensity and vehemence. It is here for the first time that the *sacra indignatio* begins to find expression, that the misanthrope declares himself. But the warfare is legitimate, and if it be vengeance it is justice. Nothing could be more admirable than the conversation between Gulliver and the King of Brobdingnag, who appears to represent Swift's ideal of a patriot king, or than the description of the constitution, habits, and customs of Brobdingnag. Many passages recall and might have been suggested by More's inimitable romance. If the work be regarded merely as a satire, it is not perhaps too much to say that in condensed and sustained power it has neither equal nor second among human productions. But it

Swift
didn't

X

X

is a satire the philosophy and morality of which will not for a moment bear serious examination. |||

The work appeared anonymously early in November, 1726. It became instantly popular. Within a week the first edition was exhausted. A second edition speedily followed, but before the second was ready pirated copies of the first were in circulation in Ireland, and the work was traversing Great Britain in all directions in the columns of a weekly journal. No one has, I think, noticed that *Gulliver* was reprinted in successive instalments in a contemporary newspaper called *Parker's Penny Post*, between November 2, 1726, and the following spring—a sufficient indication of the opinion formed of it by those who are best acquainted with the popular taste, and probably the first occasion on which the weekly press was applied to such a purpose. In France it was read with avidity, and a few weeks after its appearance portions of it were twice dramatised.¹

But, though the work appealed to all, it appealed in different ways. By the multitude it was read, as it is read in the nurseries and playrooms of our more enlightened age, with wondering credulity. But the avidity with which it was devoured by readers to whom the allegory was nothing and the story everything was equalled by the avidity with which it was devoured by readers to whom the allegory was supreme and the story purely subordinate. At Court and in political circles it was read and quoted as no satire since *Hudibras* had been. To them Flimnap and Munobi, Skyresh Bolgolam and

¹ Lady Bolingbroke to Swift, in a letter undated, but apparently written about February 17²⁷/₂₆.

Reldresal, the Tramecksan and Slamecksan, the Big-endians and Little-endians, the Sardrals and the Nardacs, the two Frellocks and Mully Ullly Gue, were what the caricatures of Gilray were, fifty years later, to the Court of George III. The circumstances which led to the flight of Gulliver from Lilliput, and the account given of the natives of Tribnia, must have come home with peculiar force and pungency to readers who could remember the proceedings which led to the imprisonment of Harley and the flight of Bolingbroke and Ormond, and in whose memories the trial of Atterbury was still fresh. To us the schemes propounded in the Academy of Lagado have no more point than the schemes which occupied the courtiers of Queen Entelechy; but how pregnant, how pertinent, how exquisite must the satire have appeared to readers who were still smarting from the Bubble-mania, who had been shareholders in the Society for Transmuting Quicksilver into Malleable Metal, or in the Society for Extracting Silver from Lead!

Nor was the satire in its broader aspect less keenly relished. Aristotle has observed that the measure of a man's moral degradation may be held to be complete when he sees nothing derogatory in joining in the gibe against himself. And what is true of an individual is assuredly true of an age. At no period distinguished by generosity of sentiment, by humanity, by decency, by any of the nobler and finer qualities of mankind, could such satire as the satire of which the greater part of *Gulliver* is the embodiment have been universally applauded. Yet so it was. The men and women of those times appear to have seen nothing objectionable in an apologue which would

scarcely have passed without protest in the Rome of Petronius. The Queen and the Princess of Wales were in raptures with it. One noble lady facetiously identified herself with the Yahoos; another declared that her whole life had been lost in caressing the worse part of mankind, and in treating the best as her foes. And so surely could Swift rely on the most disgusting passages of his work being to the taste of the ladies of the Court, that in a private letter to one of the Maids of Honour he not only referred facetiously to one of its most indecent passages, but added to the indecency. Here and there, indeed, a reader might be found who was of opinion that the satire was too strongly flavoured with misanthropy,¹ but such readers were altogether in the minority. It is remarkable that even Arbuthnot, though he objected to *Laputa*, expressed no dissatisfaction with the *Voyage to the Houyhnhnms*.

Nearly three months before the publication of *Gulliver* Swift had quitted London for Dublin. His departure had been hastened by the terrible news that the calamity which of all calamities he dreaded most was imminent. The health of Miss Johnson had long been failing, and had latterly afforded matter for grave anxiety. Shortly after Swift's arrival in England alarming symptoms had begun to develop themselves. For a while, however, his friends in Dublin had mercifully concealed the worst, and for a while his fears were not unmingled with hope. At last he knew the worst. She was on the point of death. His grief was such as absolutely to unnerve and unman him. The letters written at this time to

¹ See Young, *Conjectures on Original Composition*.

Sheridan, Worrall, and Stopford¹ exhibit a state of mind pitiable in the extreme. 'Ever since I left you,' he writes, 'my heart has been so sunk that I have not been the same man nor ever shall be again, but drag on a wretched life till it shall please God to call me away.' And again, when he expected to hear that she had passed away: 'Judge in what a temper I write this. . . . I have been long weary of the world, and shall for my small remainder of years be weary of life, having for ever lost that conversation which could only make it tolerable.' But the blow was not to fall yet. Esther Johnson rallied, and Swift again visited England.

He arrived in London with impaired health and with a mind ill at ease. Nor was the life on which he now entered at all calculated to remedy the mischief. His great work appeared. His popularity and fame were at their height, and he soon found that he had to pay the full price for his position. Neither friends nor strangers allowed him any peace. At Twickenham Pope teased him to death about the corrected edition of *Gulliver* and about the third volume of the *Miscellanies*. Gay, busy with the *Beggar's Opera*, sought anxiously to profit from his criticism; and, if tradition is to be trusted, the drama which owed its existence to Swift's suggestion owes to his pen two of its most famous songs.² In London and at Dawley he was subjected to persecutions of another kind. Peterborough and Harcourt were eager to negotiate an understanding with Walpole. Bolingbroke and Pulteney sought to engage him in active

¹ Letters between July 8 and July 26, 1726.

² The song beginning 'Through all the employments of life,' and that beginning 'Since laws were made for every degree.'

co-operation with the Opposition. The Opposition were now high in hope. The death of the King could be no remote event; and it was confidently believed that with the accession of the Prince of Wales the supremacy of Walpole would be at an end and that the Ministry would be reconstructed. The person who was popularly supposed to direct the counsels of the Prince was Mrs. Howard, the declared enemy of Walpole, the staunch ally of the faction opposed to him. That Swift shared in some measure the hopes of his friends is very likely. With Mrs. Howard he was on terms of close intimacy. Before his arrival in England he had frequently corresponded with her. During his residence in England he regularly visited her. At Leicester House he had been received with marked favour, and the Princess had gone out of her way to pay him attention. He had thus ample reason for supposing that, if affairs took the turn which his friends anticipated, the prize which had twice before eluded him would again be within his grasp. He said, indeed, that he was too old to enter into new schemes, and we know from his correspondence how greatly ill-health and private anxieties were depressing him. But his pen was not idle. To contribute to the downfall of a minister whose treatment of him had not been very different from the treatment for which he had eighteen years before made Godolphin and Somers pay so heavy a price must have been a congenial task. At the suggestion of Bolingbroke he began a letter to the *Craftsman*, in which he significantly reminded Walpole that it was a grievous mistake in a great minister to neglect or despise, much more to irritate, men of genius and

learning.¹ Suddenly—far more suddenly than was expected—occurred the event on which so much depended. On June 10 the King died. Swift remained in London during that period of intense excitement which intervened between the preferment of Sir Spencer Compton and the re-establishment of Walpole. He kissed the hands of the new King and the new Queen, made a scathing attack on the tottering minister's character and conduct,² saw in a few days that all was over, and then hurried off, sick and weary, to bury himself, first in Pope's study at Twickenham, and then at Lord Oxford's country seat at Wimpole. At the end of September he abruptly quitted England for ever.

Of his last days on this side of the Channel a singularly interesting record has within the last few years come to light. On arriving at Holyhead he found himself too late for the Dublin packet. Unfavourable weather set in, and he was detained for upwards of a week in what was then the most comfortless of British seaports. During that week he amused himself with scribbling verses and with keeping a diary. The manuscript of this diary came into the possession of the late Mr. Forster, and is preserved in the Dyce and Forster Library at South Kensington. It was edited and published by the present writer in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for June, 1882, and it has since been printed by Mr. Craik.³ Its records are of no interest in themselves, but are

¹ *Letter to the Writer of the Occasional Paper* (*Works*, x. 329).

² To this period almost certainly belongs the attack on Walpole in the *Account of the Court and Empire of Japan* (*Works*, x. 337).

³ *Life of Swift*, Appendix IX.

curiously illustrative of the temper and habits of Swift. He gives a full account of all that occurred to him since leaving Chester on September 22, entering with minute particularity into every detail of his daily experience, what he ate and drank, what he saw, where he walked, what he dreamt, and 'all this to divert thinking.' In reading the journal it is impossible not to be struck with its resemblance to the diary kept by Byron at Ravenna. In both there is the same contrast between what appears on the surface and what is beneath. In both cases the same listless wretchedness takes refuge in the same laborious trifling. Both are the soliloquies of men who are as weary of themselves as they are weary of the world, and who clutch desperately at every expedient for escaping reflection and for killing time, sometimes by investing trifles with adventitious importance, sometimes by indulging half-ironically in a sort of humorous self-analysis, sometimes by dallying lazily with idle fancies.

The death of Esther Johnson, in January, 1728; dissolved the only tie which bound Swift to life. It had been long expected, but when the end came it must have come suddenly, for, though in Dublin, he was not with her. With pathetic minuteness he has himself recorded the circumstances under which he heard of his irreparable loss. It was late in the evening of Sunday, January 28. The guests who were in the habit of assembling weekly at the deanery on that evening were round him, and it was nearly midnight before he could be alone with his sorrow. How that sad night was passed was known to none until he had himself been laid in the grave.

Then was found among his papers that most touching memorial of his grief and love—the *Memoir and Character of Esther Johnson*. Firmly and calmly had the desolate old man met the calamity which a few months before he had described himself as not daring to contemplate. That night he commenced the narrative which tells the story of her in whose coffin was buried all that made existence tolerable to him. And regularly as each night came round he appears to have resumed his task. There is something almost ghastly in the contrast between the smooth and icy flow of the chronicle itself and the terribly pathetic significance of the parentheses which mark the stages in its composition. ‘This,’ he writes on the night of the 30th, ‘is the night of the funeral, which my sickness will not suffer me to attend. It is now nine o’clock, and I am removed into another compartment that I may not see the light in the church, which is just over the window of my bed-chamber.’ Sorrow and despair have many voices, but seldom have they found expression so affecting as in those calm and simple words. It is said that her name was never afterwards known to pass his lips. When, seventeen years later, his own coffin had been laid beside hers, his executors found in his desk a lock of hair with four words written on the paper which wrapped it. The hair was Stella’s; the words, ‘Only a woman’s hair.’

Se non piangi, di che pianger suoli ?

CHAPTER IX

LIFE IN IRELAND—LAST DAYS AND DEATH

I

THE biography of Swift from the death of Esther Johnson to the hour in which his own eyes closed on the world is a tragedy sadder and more awful than any of those pathetic fictions which appal and melt us on the stage of Sophocles and Shakespeare. The distressing malady under which he laboured never for long relaxed its grasp, and when the paroxysms were not actually on him the daily and hourly dread of their return was scarcely less agonising. In that malady he thought he discerned the gradual but inevitable approach of a calamity which is of all the calamities incident to man the most frightful to contemplate. Over his spirits hung the cloud of profound and settled melancholy. His wretchedness was without respite and without alloy. When he was not under the spell of dull, dumb misery, he was on the rack of furious passions.

Sense of intolerable wrong,
And whom he scorned, those only strong;
Thirst of revenge, the powerless will
Still battled and yet burning still,
For aye entempesting anew
The unfathomable hell within.

His writings and correspondence exhibit a mind perpetually oscillating between unutterable despair and demoniac rage, between a misanthropy bitterer and more savage than that which tore the heart of Timon, and a sympathy with suffering humanity as acute and sensitive as that which vibrated in Rousseau and Shelley.

It was not until the accession of George II. that Swift fully realised the hopelessness of effecting any reform in Ireland. His second interview with Walpole had convinced him that, so long as that minister was at the head of affairs, the policy of England would remain unchanged, that a deaf ear would be turned to all appeals, all protests, all suggestions. The new reign would, he had hoped, have placed the reins of government in new hands. It had, on the contrary, confirmed the supremacy of Walpole, and the fate of Ireland was sealed. But what enraged him most was the consciousness that his efforts to awaken in the Irish themselves the spirit of resistance and reform had wholly failed. None of his proposals had been carried out, none of his warnings had been heeded. All was as all had been before. An ignoble rabble of sycophants and slaves still grovelled at the feet of Power. Corruption and iniquity pervaded the whole public service; the two Houses still swarmed with the tools of oppression; and the country, which his genius and energy had for a moment galvanised into life, had again sunk torpid and inert into the degradation in which he had found her. In the provinces was raging one of the most frightful famines ever known in the annals of the peasantry. Never, perhaps, in the whole course of her melancholy history

was the condition of Ireland more deplorable than at the beginning of 1729.¹ All this worked like poison in Swift's blood, and, like the cleaving mischief of the fable, tortured him without intermission till torture ceased to be possible. But the savage indignation which the spectacle of English misgovernment excited in him was now fully equalled by the disdain and loathing with which he regarded the sufferers themselves. Towards the aborigines his feelings had never been other than those of repulsion and contempt, mingled with the sort of pity which the humane feel for the sufferings of the inferior animals. As a politician he looked upon them pretty much as Prospero looked upon Caliban, or as a Spartan legislator looked upon the Helots: On the regeneration of the Englishry depended, in his opinion, the regeneration of the whole island. It was in their interests that he had laboured. It was on their co-operation that he had relied. It was to them that he had appealed. And he had found them as frivolous, as impracticable, as despicable, as their compatriots. The hatred with which Swift in his latter years regarded Ireland and its inhabitants recalls in its intensity and bitterness the hatred with which Juvenal appears to have regarded the people of Egypt and Dante the people of the Val d'Arno. It resembled a consuming passion. It overflowed, we are told, in his conversation, it glows at white heat in his writings, it flames out in his correspondence. 'It is time for me,' he says in one place, 'to have done with the world, and not die here in a rage, like a poisoned rat in a hole.' He is 'in a cursed, oppressed, miserable

¹ See Boulter's letters between November, 1728, and October, 1729.

country, not made so by nature, but by the slavish, hellish principles of an execrable prevailing faction.' He is surrounded 'by slaves and knaves and fools,' in a country which is 'a wretched dirty dog-hole; a prison, but good enough to die in.' Man 'he hates more than a toad, a viper, a wasp, a stork, a fox, or any other that you will please to add.' He is 'worn out with years and sickness and rage against all public proceedings;' and 'what has sunk his spirits more than years and sickness is reflecting on the most execrable corruptions that run through every branch of public management.' 'My flesh and bones,' he furiously exclaims in another letter, 'are to be carried to Holyhead, for I will not lie in a country of slaves.'

His serious writings during the whole of the period between the death of Stella and the time at which he sank into fatuity have one note—rage and despair. In *A Short View of the State of Ireland*, published in the middle of 1727, he again drew the attention of England to the horrors and calamities for which she was responsible. But the words he sowed he was sowing, as he well knew, on the wind. Then his pleas and his protests clothed themselves in the ghastly irony of the *Modest Proposal*, and England answered that she appreciated the humour and enjoyed the joke. Next he turned furiously on his old enemies the Bishops. In 1731 two Bills had been brought forward—one for the purpose of enforcing clerical residence and compelling the clergy to build houses upon their glebes, the other for subdividing large livings into as many portions as the Bishops should advise. It is not easy to see what was mischievous or unreasonable in these proposals. But

Swift, tearing them to pieces in two savage pamphlets,¹ denounced them as designed to enslave and beggar the clergy, and as having taken their birth from Hell. Nor did the Bishops escape without castigation. The fathers of the Church have seldom stood in such a pillory as we find them standing in *Judas* and in *The Irish Bishops*.² From the Bishops he turned to the Dissenters. Any indulgence to the Dissenters, any attempt to relax the stringency of the Test Act, had even in his calmer days brought him instantly into the arena. But his hostility was now inflamed by other causes; his opposition had new motives. The Government were almost pledged to indulgence, the Whig Bishops to a man were in favour of it. In resisting such a measure he would therefore be annoying and embarrassing his political enemies, and have at the same time the peculiar satisfaction of assuming the championship of the Church against its natural defenders. Between 1731 and 1734 measures were taken for introducing a Bill, and a memorial was drawn up for presentation to the Privy Council.³ Then Swift opened fire. He began by reprinting his *Presbyterian Plea of Merit*, and went on to produce his *Narrative of the Several Attempts which have been made for a Repeal of the Sacramental Test*, following it up next year by his bitterly ironical *Advantages Proposed by Repealing the Sacramental Test*. This was succeeded by his *Queries concerning the Sacramental Test* and his *Reasons humbly offered to the Parliament of*

¹ *On the Bill for the Clergy Residing on their Livings* (Scott, ix. 5), and *Considerations upon the Two Bills* (Id. p. 13).

² Scott, x. 268, and xiv. 525.

³ For all this see Boulter's *Letters*, ii. 85-90.

Ireland for Repealing the Sacramental Test in Favour of the Catholics. The contempt and ridicule which he poured on the unfortunate sectaries and their advocates lost no point when embodied in verse.¹ His efforts had been successful, and a large majority in the Irish House of Commons were firm for the Test Act. He now fought the battle of the Church on another field—against the landlords and against the Parliament. Towards the close of 1733 a Bill had been presented in the Commons for the encouragement of the linen manufacture, containing a clause for limiting, by a modus, the tithe payable on flax and hemp. As flax was the staple commodity of Ireland, the proposed commutation would have affected seriously the incomes of the inferior clergy, entailing a loss of two parts in three of the legal tithe. Swift therefore opposed the Bill in a most powerful pamphlet,² and joined with others in a petition presented to the House of Commons. The result was a compromise, and a compromise which was not satisfactory. And now began his war with the Irish House of Commons. There appears at this time to have been a determined attempt on the part of the landlords to resist the claims of the clergy. The contest centred on the tithe of pasturage, or, as it was technically called, the tithe of agistment. It was resisted on all sides. Several suits instituted by defrauded clergymen were pending in the Court of Exchequer. The burdens of this tithe fell principally on the great graziers

¹ See the poem *Brother Protestants and Fellow Christians* (Scott, x. 532).

² *Some Reasons against the Bill for settling the Tythe of Hemp and Flax by a Modus* (Scott, x. 29).

and the great landlords, many of whom had a seat in the House of Commons. At their instigation resolutions were passed against the claims for the purpose of intimidating the clergy from instituting suits and the courts of law from deliberating upon them. Of the illegality and gross injustice of such proceedings there could be no question. A more flagrant opposition of power to right could scarcely be conceived. By these persecutions many of the clergy were all but ruined. A very cruel case came prominently into public notice. A Mr. Throp, who had refused to surrender to the patron of his living, one Colonel Waller, some of its most important rights, was so harassed and broken by lawsuits, assaults, and arrests, that his health sank under them and he died. Upon that his brother presented a petition to Parliament, stating the case against the Colonel, and praying that the House, considering the atrocity of Waller's conduct, would, though Waller was a member of their body, waive their privilege, and allow proceedings by arrest to be taken against him. Swift, already exasperated beyond measure by the action of the Commons in the agistment matter, now stepped in. He drew up a short statement of Throp's case which so provoked Waller that he offered a reward of ten guineas to any one who would discover the author. Meanwhile, the petition had been considered and unanimously rejected by the House. To say that the philippic in which Swift's vengeance found expression has neither equal nor second in the literature of invective and satire would be but feeble testimony to its appalling power. The *Legion Club* stands alone—

alone alike in the spirit that animates it and as a masterpiece of art. It seems to boil, a blasting flood of filth and vitriol, out of some hellish fountain. So devilish is the malignity infusing it, so maniacal the fury of the scorn and hatred, that it would not have been surprising if the inspiration had overpowered the artist. But the execution is perfect. Nothing could be constructed with more exquisite ingenuity than the framework, nothing more elaborately finished than the details. The skill with which he selects, and in selecting concentrates, all those images and associations which could deform, degrade, and defile—the malicious tact with which, in gibbeting individuals, he seizes on what could be turned to most account against them in their persons, or in their public or private life, till every couplet has the sting of a hornet—the deliberation with which he gradually unfolds his horrible and loathsome panorama—the climax in the pinch of snuff and the parting curse, ‘May their God—the devil—confound them!’—all show that the most terrible of satirists was one of the most finished and patient of artists.

II

But these controversies did not occupy the whole of Swift's time. The extraordinary activity of his mind, and his habit of occupying himself in writing that he might escape from himself and, in his own words, divert thinking, resulted in the production of an immense number of compositions both in verse and in prose. Indeed, the mere enumeration of the pieces

composed by him between 1727 and 1737 would occupy several pages. The greater part of these are trifles, which have been piously collected by his editors, but which were hardly worth preserving. But the list contains also some of his best poems and two of the best of his non-political minor prose writings. In the autumn of 1731 he told his friends Gay and the Duchess of Queensberry that he was engaged on a work which was to reduce the whole politeness, wit, humour, and style of England into one short system for the use of all persons of quality, and particularly the Maids of Honour. This was the *Art of Polite Conversation*. With an irony the acrimony of which is very characteristic of his temper in his later days, but hardly appropriate to the trifles on which it is here employed, he ridicules the frivolities and affectations then characteristic of conversation in modish society. With the *Directions to Servants*, a part of the same scheme, he took immense pains, kept it by him, and added to it year by year. When the manuscript had passed out of his hands he was anxious for its recovery that it might not be lost, for he thought the work 'useful as well as humorous.' Of its humour there can be no question; its usefulness may be doubted. It is the most striking illustration to be found in his works of one of his characteristics—his habit of observing and noting with minute accuracy all that passed round him. The work has some happy touches, but the general effect is tedious, and by its incompletion literature has sustained no great loss. To one portion of it special interest belongs. The *Directions to the Footman* gave Fielding the idea of Jonathan Wild.

Of the poems, the verses *On the Death of Dr. Swift*, the *Grand Question Debated*, the *Rhapsody on Poetry*, the *Directions for Making a Birthday Song*, the *Epistle to a Lady who desired the Author to write some Verses upon her in the Heroic Style*, and the *Day of Judgment*, are incomparably the best. But, with the exception of the first and the last, they were mere trifles, thrown off occasionally, as scores of others were, listlessly, to kill time. 'I would not give three pence,' he writes to his friend Barber, 'for all I read, or write, or think, in the compass of a year.' They stand in the same relation to the man himself as his frivolities at Market Hill or at Howth Castle, transitory gleams on an abyss of gloom, straws on a boiling torrent. It is not to these poems, it is to poems of another class, and to his correspondence, that we must turn if we would raise the veil of his inner life. In these poems—and they extend over the whole of this period—he found a vent for the passions which the turn of a mood or the smallest provocation instantly awoke. In them his misanthropy, his hatred of individuals, his rage, his pessimism, flamed out unrestrained. Of some of these poems it would be no exaggeration to say that nothing so purely diabolical had ever before emanated from man. There are passages in the satirists of antiquity which are—in mere indecency perhaps—as shameless and brutal. A misanthropy almost as bitter flavours the satire in which Juvenal depicts the feud between the Ombites and the Tentyrites. The invectives of Junius and the libels of Pope not unfrequently exhibit a malignity scarcely human; and if the Mephistopheles of fable could be clothed in flesh, his mockery would probably

be the mockery of Voltaire and Heine. But the later satire of Swift stands alone. It is the very alcohol of hatred and contempt. Its intensity is the intensity of monomania, whether its object be an individual, a sect, or mankind. To find any parallel to such pieces as the *Ladies' Dressing Room*, *Cassinus and Peter*, *On Corinna*, *Strephon and Chloe*, *A Love Poem*, the *Place of the Damned*, the *Beasts' Confession*, and the *Legion Club*, we must go to the speeches in which the depraved and diseased mind of Lear runs riot in obscenity and rage. But it was when his satire was directed against particular individuals that it became most inhuman and most noisome. Such, for example, would be the attack on Walpole in the *Epistle to Gay*, the attack on Allen in *Traulus*, the libels on Bellesworth, and the libels on Tighe. To provoke the hostility of Swift was, in truth, like rousing the energies of a skunk and a polecat. It was to engage in a contest the issue of which was certain—to be compelled to beat an ignominious retreat, cruelly lacerated, and half suffocated with filth.

But, if the sufferings entailed on him by passions like these were great, if the *inordinatus animus* brought its tortures, we have only to turn to his correspondence to see how black were the clouds that had settled over his life. There is something inexpressibly pathetic in the way in which he clings to the old scenes, to the old associations, to the old friends. Sheridan, Acheson, Delany, were shadows to him. He never took them to his heart; he never admitted them into his confidence. It is only when he is writing to Pope, to Peterborough, to Gay, to Arbuthnot, to Barber, to Bolingbroke, that he seems

to be himself. But one by one all sank out of his life. In December, 1732, death removed Gay. In October, 1734, Arbuthnot followed. The acuteness with which he felt these losses and the inexpressible wretchedness of his life during all these years are sufficiently testified by his letters to those to whom he opened his mind freely. That he never woke without finding life a more insignificant thing than it was the day before—that it was not a farce but a ridiculous tragedy—that he thought of death not, as he once did, every day, but every minute—that he never took up his pen in any cause without saying to himself a thousand times *non est tanti*—this is the strain from first to last.

But Swift's private miseries, his fierce or gloomy moods, his feuds, his controversies, his contempt for those he served, his contempt for those who assisted him, never suspended or even interrupted his benevolent activity. The most savage of misanthropes was in practice the most indefatigable of philanthropists. No city ever owed more to a private man than Dublin owed to Swift. We have already seen how in 1720 he defeated, or at least contributed to defeat, a scheme which would in all probability have involved hundreds of her citizens in beggary, and how successfully he grappled with one of the most formidable pests which infest great cities. His proposal to provide beggars with badges did much to abate another nuisance scarcely less mischievous and troublesome;¹ and his *Considerations about Maintaining the*

¹ See his *Proposal for giving Badges to the Beggars in all the Parishes of Dublin* (Scott, vii. 581).

Poor,¹ which was probably interrupted by ill-health, shows with what anxious attention he had studied the subject. His care, indeed, extended to every department of civic economy, from the direction of municipal and parliamentary elections² to the regulation of the coal traffic.³

It may be said of Dr. Swift, writes one who knew him well, that he literally followed the example of his Master, and went about doing good.⁴ His private charity, though judicious, was boundless. He never, we are told, went about without a pocketful of coins, which he distributed among the indigent and sick. His severe frugality, which fools mistook for avarice, arose solely from his determination to devote his money to the noblest uses to which money can be applied. If he denied himself and his guests superfluities, it was that he might provide the needy with necessaries and posterity with St. Patrick's Hospital. He established a fund for charitable loans to the industrious poor; he was acquainted with every beggar within the liberties of St. Patrick's, many of whom were in receipt of a small pension from him. His correspondence teems with instances of his kindness. Indeed, no one who deserved assistance or needed advice ever applied to him in vain. And he had his reward. If as the Drapier he commanded the homage and gratitude of all Ireland, as the Dean he was the idol of the people of Dublin. He

¹ *Works*, vii. 576.

² See his *Considerations . . . on the Choice of a Recorder* (Scott, vii. 561), and *Advice to the Freemen of Dublin* (Id. p. 553).

³ See his *Letters upon the Use of Irish Coal*, and Scott, p. 408 seqq.

⁴ Delany, *Observations*, p. 261.

called them his subjects, and they were proud of the title. 'I know by experience' (wrote Carteret just after he resigned the Lord Lieutenancy) 'how much the city of Dublin thinks itself under your protection, and how strictly they used to obey all orders fulminated from the sovereignty of St. Patrick's.' On the last occasion on which he took part in public affairs the Primate Boulter, whose proposal for diminishing the value of gold coin he had opposed, charged him at an entertainment of the Lord Mayor's with inflaming the populace against him. 'I inflame them!' replied Swift; 'had I lifted my finger they would have torn you to pieces.' In his war with England and with that party in Dublin which was in the English interest he was not unfrequently threatened with violence; but the mere rumour that the Dean was in danger was sufficient to rally round him a bodyguard so formidable that he had little to fear either from the law or from private malice. It is said that Walpole was once on the point of despatching a messenger with a warrant to arrest the Dean and bring him over to England. But on a gentleman, who knew Swift's position better than the minister, asking significantly what army was to accompany the messenger, and whether the Government had ten thousand men to spare, Walpole very wisely took the hint and the matter dropped.

But to Swift all this was nothing. Sick of himself, sick of the world, fully aware of the awful fate which was impending over him—he saw it, says Lyon, as plainly as men foresee a coming shower—he longed only, he prayed only, for death. It was his constant habit—it had been so for years—to take leave of one

of the few friends whom he admitted to his intimacy, and who was accustomed to visit him two or three times a week, with the words, 'Well, God bless you, good night to you, but I hope I shall never see you again.'¹ At the end of 1737 it became apparent to his friends, and it becomes painfully apparent in his correspondence, that his mind was rapidly failing. The deafness and giddiness which had before visited him intermittently now rarely left him. His memory was so impaired that he was scarcely able to converse. It was only with the greatest difficulty that he could express himself on paper. 'I am so stupid and confounded,' he writes to Mrs. Whiteway in July, 1740, 'that I cannot express the mortification I am under both in body and mind. All I can say is I am not in torture, but I daily and hourly expect it. I am sure my days will be very few, few and miserable they must be.' Few they were not to be. More than five years of agony and degradation were before him. As his intellect decayed his irritability and ferocity increased. On the slightest provocation he would break out into paroxysms of frantic rage. At last he lost completely all self-command. His reason gave way, and he ceased to be responsible either for his words or for his actions.² In March, 1742, guardians were appointed for him by the Court of Chancery. On August 12 in the same year, at the petition of the Rev. John Grattan and the Rev. James King, a Writ *De Lunatic*

¹ Sheridan, p. 391.

² In the Hardwicke MSS. quoted by Harris, *Life of Hardwicke*, ii. 21, a very painful detail of Swift's madness is given, which sufficiently explains why Mrs. Whiteway could not be in attendance on him.

Inquirendo was issued, reciting 'that the Dean of St. Patrick's hath for these nine months past been gradually failing in his memory, and that he is incapable of transacting any business or managing, conducting, or taking care either of his estate or person.' On August 17 a Commission was appointed; a jury was empanelled, and their report corroborated the statement of the petitioners.¹ Into a particular account of Swift's last years it would be almost agony to enter. Nothing in the recorded history of humanity, nothing that the imagination of man has conceived, can transcend in horror and pathos the accounts which have come down to us of the closing scenes of his life. His memory was gone, his reason was gone; he recognised no friend; he was below his own *Strukdbrugs*. Day after day he paced his chamber, as a wild beast paces its cage, taking his food as he walked, but refusing to touch it as long as any one remained in the room. During the autumn of 1742 his state was horrible and pitiable beyond expression. At last, after suffering unspeakable tortures from one of the most agonising maladies known to surgery, he sank into the torpor of imbecility. By the mercy of Providence it generally happens that man so degraded is unconscious of his degradation. But this mercy was withheld from Swift. On one occasion he was found gazing at his image in a pier-glass and muttering piteously over and over again, 'Poor old man!' On another he exclaimed, frequently repeating it, 'I am what I am.'

¹ These melancholy documents, the originals or copies of which are in the Forster Collection at the South Kensington Museum, have only recently come to light, and are printed for the first time in the second Appendix to this volume.

'He never talked nonsense,' says Deane Swift, 'nor said a foolish thing.' In this deplorable condition he continued for two years, and then maintained unbroken silence till death released him from calamity. He expired at three o'clock on the afternoon of Saturday, October 19, 1745. Three days afterwards his coffin was laid at midnight beside the coffin of Esther Johnson in the south nave of St. Patrick's Cathedral.

CHAPTER X

CHARACTERISTICS

I

THE characteristics of this extraordinary man, so far as they revealed themselves practically in action and conduct, and reflectively in his writings, have in the preceding pages been sufficiently illustrated. We have now to consider him critically, to analyse and, if possible, to account for his idiosyncrasies, and to examine his claims to a place among English classics. But the critic of Swift has no easy task. He is confronted on the very threshold of his inquiry with a problem perplexing enough in itself, but perplexed still further by the efforts which have been made to solve it. From Swift's own day to the present it has been assumed that many of the essential peculiarities of his temper and genius are to be referred to constitutional disease, or were, at all events, considerably modified by it; that in early youth were sown the seeds of a malady which, developing ultimately into insanity, tainted his whole life and affected throughout, both directly and indirectly, much of his work. We now know, and know with certainty, that this was not the case. The distressing complaints which caused him so much inconvenience and suffering, and of which he speaks so frequently in his correspondence, had not,

as he himself supposed, any connection with the calamity which befell him in his later days. They neither impaired nor perverted his mental powers. They had no more effect on the brain than an attack of bronchitis or a fit of the gout would have had. My readers will, I trust, forgive me for entering into medical details, but until the erroneous views which have been so long prevalent on the subject of Swift's disease have been dispelled, erroneous views will continue to be prevalent on more important points. He can never, as a subject of physiological study, be approached properly. He can never, as a critic of man and life, be correctly estimated. The history of his case is briefly this. In his twenty-third year he became subject to fits of giddiness; in his twenty-eighth year, or, according to another account, before he had completed his twentieth year, he was attacked by fits of deafness. The first disorder he attributed primarily to a surfeit of green fruit; the origin of the second he ascribed to a common cold. The giddiness was occasionally attended with sickness, the deafness with ringing in the ears, and both with extreme depression. The attacks were periodic and paroxysmal, increasing in frequency and severity as life advanced. As old age drew on, his giddiness and deafness became more constant and intense; he grew morbidly irritable; he lost all control over his temper, his intellect became abnormally enfeebled, his memory at times almost totally failed him. But it was not until he had completed his seventy-fourth year that he exhibited what seemed to be symptoms of insanity. In 1742 what appeared to be an attack of acute mania—though it was mania without delusion, and may

perhaps have been merely the frenzied expression of excruciating physical pain, occasioned by a tumour in the eye—was succeeded by absolute fatuity. In this state, broken, however, as we have seen, by occasional gleams of sensibility and reason, he remained till death. The autopsy revealed water on the brain—the common result, it may be added, of cerebral atrophy.

That a disease presenting such symptoms as these should have originated from a surfeit of fruit and a common cold was a theory that may have passed unchallenged in the infancy of medical science, but was not likely to find favour in more enlightened times. Accordingly, at the beginning of this century, an eminent physician, Dr. Beddoes,¹ came forward with another hypothesis. He entertained no doubt that the disease was homogeneous and progressive, and, connecting its primary symptoms with other peculiarities of Swift's conduct and writings, he ascribed their origin to a cause very derogatory to the moral character of the sufferer. Scott, justly indignant that such an aspersion should have been cast on the Dean's memory, took occasion in his *Life of Swift* to comment very severely on Beddoes's remarks.² But Scott, unfortunately, had no means of refuting them. Medical science was silent; and Swift, ludicrous to relate, has been held up in more than one publication as an appalling illustration of the effects of profligate indulgence. At last, in 1846, Sir William Wilde came to the rescue. In an essay in the *Dublin Quarterly Journal of Medical Science*, afterwards published in a volume entitled *The Closing Years of Dean Swift's Life*, he reinvestigated with the minutest care the whole

¹ *Hygeia*, Essay ix.

² P. 28, note.

case. In the first place, he made the important discovery that Swift had undoubtedly had a stroke of paralysis. This was a circumstance which had not been recorded by any of the biographers, but which a plaster cast, taken from the mask applied to the face after death, placed beyond doubt. Wilde boldly contended that there was no proof at all that Swift was ever insane in the sense in which the word is usually understood—nay, that previous to 1742 he showed no symptoms whatever of mental disease ‘beyond the ordinary decay of nature.’ The deplorable condition into which he subsequently sank Wilde attributed not to insanity, or to imbecility, but to paralysis of the muscles by which the mechanism of speech is produced, and to loss of memory, the result in all probability of subarachnoid effusion. But what Wilde failed to understand was the nature of the original disease—in other words, the cause of the giddiness and deafness which, whatever may have been their connection with the graver symptoms of the case, undoubtedly preceded and ushered them in. And it is here that Dr. Bucknill comes to our assistance. In his opinion the life-long malady of Swift is to be identified with a malady which medical science has only recently recognised, ‘Labyrinthine Vertigo,’ or, as it is sometimes called, in honour of the eminent pathologist who discovered it, ‘Ménière’s Disease.’¹ To this are to be attributed all the symptoms which were supposed by Swift himself to have originated from a surfeit of fruit or a chill, which Beddoes attributed to profligate habits, and which Sir William Wilde was

¹ See *Brain* for January, 1882, and letter printed in Appendix I. of this volume.

unable satisfactorily to account for. It was a purely physical and local disorder, which in no way affected the intellect, and which, had it run its course uncomplicated, would probably have ended merely in complete deafness. But on this disorder supervened, between 1738 and 1742, dementia, with hemiplegia and aphasia; the dementia arising from general decay of the brain occasioned by age and degeneration, the hemiplegia and aphasia resulting from disease of a particular part of the brain, probably the third left frontal convolution. Thus the insanity, or, to speak more accurately, the fatuity, of Swift was not, as he himself and his biographers after him have supposed, the gradual development of years, but was partly the effect of senile decay and partly the effect of a local lesion.

The truth is that a mind saner than Swift's, a mind of stouter and stonger fabric, a mind in which the reason, the pure reason, sat enthroned more securely, has never existed. From first to last, so long as he continued in possession of his faculties, it was his distinguishing characteristic; it was his standard; it was his touchstone; it remained unshaken and unimpaired, a fortress of rock on which the turbulent chaos of his furious passions broke harmlessly.

The chief peculiarity of Swift's temper lay in the coexistence not merely of opposite qualities but of opposite natures. The union of a hard, cold, logical intellect with a heart of almost feminine tenderness is no uncommon anomaly. But the anomaly which Swift presents is not an anomaly of this kind. In acute susceptibility to sensuous and emotional

impression he resembled Rousseau and Shelley. His nervous organisation was quite as exquisite, his sensibility as keen, his perceptions as nice. He was as dependent on human sympathy and on human affection; he was as passionately moved by what men less finely tempered regard with composure. The sight of a fellow-creature in distress or pain, the spectacle of an unjust or cruel action, a fancied slight conveyed in a word or look, an offensive or disagreeable object, were to him, as to them, little less than torture. Thus on the sensuous and emotional side he had the temperament of the poet and the enthusiast. But Nature had not completed what she had begun. She had bestowed on him the *cor cordium*; she had endowed him with 'the love of love' and 'the hate of hate'; she had been lavish of the gifts which are the poet's most painful inheritance; but from all else, from all that constitutes the poet's solaces, the poet's charm, the poet's power, she had excluded him. Utterly devoid of a sense of the beautiful, of the beautiful in nature, in the human form, in morals, in art, in philosophy, he neither sought it nor recognised it when seen. Its representation in concrete form is always perverted by him into the grotesque and ugly. As a critic and philosopher he has only one criterion—plain good sense in the one case, practical utility in the other. Of any perception of the ideal, of any sympathy with effort or tendency to aspire to it, he was as destitute as Sancho Panza and Falstaff. On no class of people have the shafts of his contemptuous raillery fallen thicker than on those who would seek for finer bread than is made of flour, and on the originators of Utopian schemes. His own ideal of life

began and ended, as he himself frankly admitted, with the attainment of worldly success.¹ Of transcendental imagination, nay, of the transcendental instinct, he had nothing. He never appears to have had even a glimpse of those truths which lie outside the scope of the senses and the reason, and which find their expression in poetry and in sentimental religion. He never refers to them as embodied in the first without ridicule and contempt, nor as embodied in the second without coldly resolving them into compulsory dogmas. 'Violent zeal for Truth,' he observes, 'has a hundred to one odds to be either petulancy, ambition, or pride.'² If he does not deny the divine element in man and in the world, it is only because it forms an article of the creed which for other reasons he thought it expedient to uphold. But what he did not deny he either ignored or obscured. A conception of human nature and of human life more inconsistent than his with any theory of divinity either within man or without it would be impossible to find, even in the writings of professed atheists. 'Miserable mortals!' he exclaims in his *Thoughts on Religion*, 'can we contribute to the honour and glory of God? I could wish that expression were struck out of our prayer-books.' His whole conception of religion appears to have been almost purely political. What Fielding puts into the mouth of

¹ 'All my endeavours, from a boy, to distinguish myself were only for the want of a great title and fortune, that I might be used like a lord by those who have an opinion of my parts, whether right or wrong it is no great matter; and so the reputation of wit and great learning does the office of a blue ribbon or of a coach and six horses.' (Letter to Bolingbroke, April 5, 1829.)

² *Thoughts on Religion* (Works, viii. 173).

Thwackum is literally descriptive of Swift's attitude: 'When I mention religion I mean the Christian religion; and not only the Christian religion, but the Protestant; and not only the Protestant, but the Church of England.' He makes no distinction between Deists and Nonconformists, between Roman Catholics and Infidels. They are all equally denounced, and regarded as equally excluded from the pale of what constitutes 'religion.' And what constitutes religion has been prescribed by the State. To that every man should be compelled to adhere. In relation to its essence and apart from its accidents he never contemplates it. 'Religion,' he insists, 'supposes Heaven and Hell, the Word of God, and Sacraments.'¹ He complains bitterly that men should be allowed a freedom in religious matters which they are not allowed in political; that a citizen who prefers a commonwealth to monarchy, and who should endeavour to establish one, would be punished with the utmost rigour of the law, but that a citizen who prefers Nonconformity to Episcopalianism is at perfect liberty to choose the one instead of the other.² So completely are the spiritual and essential elements of religion subordinated to its political and temporal utility, that he contends boldly that the truth or falsehood of the fundamental opinions on which the creed of the Christian rests are of comparatively little moment compared with the mischief involved in questioning them; that it is not requisite for a man to believe what he professes; and that it matters little what doubts and scruples he may have, provided

¹ *Advice to a Young Poet* (*Works*, ix. 392).

² *Thoughts on Religion* (*Id.* viii. 176).

he keeps them to himself.¹ A man may be allowed, he observes elsewhere in reference to this subject, to keep poisons in his closet, but not to vend them about for cordials.² If, as has been sometimes supposed, he depicts his ideal man in the King of Brobdingnag, and his ideal of human excellence in the Houyhnhnms, it is remarkable that religion has no place in the education and life of either. The virtues of the former are those of pure stoicism; the virtues of the latter are summed up in friendship, benevolence, temperance, industry, and cleanliness.

It is, of course, impossible to say, but it is very doubtful whether Swift's own opinions inclined certainly towards belief in the promises of Christianity, or even in a future state. The balance of probability is decidedly adverse to the first supposition, and wavers very uncertainly in favour of the second. His attitude towards the metaphysics of Christianity is always the same; he never dwells on them, and whenever it is possible he avoids them. In his sermon on the Trinity he speaks of his theme as 'a subject which probably I should not have chosen if I had not been invited to it.' Rigidly orthodox, he repeats over and over again that what the Church teaches is no matter for argument and question, but must be accepted implicitly and in its integrity. Episcopal Protestant Christianity supplies as a coercive moral agency what no system of morality apart from it is able to supply; it must, therefore, be retained, and if it is not retained

¹ *Thoughts on Religion* (Works, viii. 174).

² *Gulliver's Travels—Voyage to Brobdingnag.*

with all its dogmas it ceases to be Christianity.¹ This is his note throughout in apology as in exegesis. Without unction, without fervour, without sentiment, he leaves us with the impression that he neither sought nor found in the Gospel which he accepted and delivered so faithfully anything that illuminated or anything that cheered. Of its power as a source of consolation in sorrow he was well aware. 'Take courage from Christianity,' he writes to Mrs. White-way, 'which will assist you when humanity fails.' But he took from it, or seems to have taken from it, little courage himself. It is mournfully apparent that no ray from the creed of faith and hope pierced the gloom of that long night which descended on the winter of his life.

Assuming, as a churchman, the truth of Christianity, he was bound also, as a churchman, to assume the existence of a future state. But the evidence for supposing that it formed any article of his personal belief is very slight. In his *Thoughts on Religion* he makes no reference to it, but observes of death that a thing so natural, so necessary, and so universal could not have been designed by Providence as an evil to mankind. In his sermons he never dwells on it. In his letters of consolation in bereavement he wrote, of course, as propriety dictated that a clergyman should write. And yet even here his expressions are frequently very guarded and sometimes ambiguous. 'Religion regards life,' he writes to Mrs. Moore on the death of her daughter, 'only as a preparation for a better, which you are taught to be certain that

¹ See Sermons, *passim*, but particularly that on the Testimony of Conscience.

so innocent a person is now in possession of.'¹ He would, he said to Pope, exchange youth for advanced old age, if he could be as secure of a better life as Mrs. Pope deemed herself.² 'If,' he remarked when his mother died, 'the way to Heaven be through piety, truth, justice and charity, she is there.' In his reflections on the death of Esther Johnson he makes no reference to immortality. In the prayers which he offered for her in her last illness he expresses a hope that she 'may be received into everlasting habitations,' but there is nothing to indicate that he felt the smallest confidence in the realisation of such hopes. His own epitaph is without a trace of Christian sentiment—that he had found in the grave a haven *ubi sæva indignatio ulterius cor lacerare nequit*—that he had left in his life an example which all who loved liberty would do well to imitate—this was the only assurance, this the only admonition, which he desired to proclaim from the tomb. It is possible, of course, that his reticence and reserve on religious subjects had its origin in the same cause which led him to conceal so studiously from guests in his house the fact that he daily read prayers to his servants—that it arose from his detestation of pretence and especially of pretentious piety. And this is by no means improbable, for there can be little doubt that, had he been as convinced of the truth of the Christian dogmas as St. Paul himself, he would have avoided ostentatious or enthusiastic profession.³ But a

¹ See his beautiful letter (*Works*, xvii. 197).

² Letter to Pope, *Id.* p. 224.

³ 'There was no vice,' says Delany, 'he so much abhorred as hypocrisy, and of consequence nothing he dreaded so much as to be suspected of it, and this made him often conceal his piety with more care than others take to conceal their vices.'—*Observations*, pp. 43-44.

distinction must be made between the avoidance of ostentatious or enthusiastic profession and such an attitude as Swift's. We must take into consideration the whole tenor of his character and writings, and the impression conveyed by them is that of a man who was endeavouring honestly to support a part. He was convinced of the absolute necessity of maintaining, in the interests of society as well as of particular individuals, the Christian religion with all its dogmas; he felt that the balance of what he could accept as sound and true in its teaching was more and much more than a counterpoise to what might be unsound and untrue; and he probably felt that what he could not accept he could not absolutely pronounce to be false. Applying the test of the politician, the magistrate, and the philanthropist, he was content to dispense with the test of the transcendental philosopher.¹ Hence his habit of avoiding all discussion of such subjects as the immortality of the soul and a future state, his guarded phrases, his plain unwillingness to commit himself to expressions of his personal opinions, his appeals to reason rather than to faith, the ethical as distinguished from the theological character of his teaching, the absence, in the stress of affliction, of any indication of faith and hope.

His deficiency on the side of what we commonly call sentiment is not less remarkable. Sentiment is never likely to be found in any great degree where the transcendental instinct is lacking. But the total atrophy, or rather non-existence, of both in a man

¹ Swift's opinions on religion probably differed little from those expressed so admirably by Polybius, vi. ch. 56, 57; by Strabo, i. ch. 2, 8; and by Cicero, *De Legibus*, ii. ch. 7.

of strong affections and of acute susceptibility to emotional impression is an anomaly rare indeed in the temper of men. Of sentiment Swift was so wholly devoid that it was unintelligible to him. Its expression in language he regarded as cant, its expression in action as affectation and folly. For him life had no illusions, man no mystery, nature no charm. He looked on woman's beauty with the eye of an anatomist, on earth's beauties with the eye of a chemist. In the passion which not unfrequently transforms even the grossest and most commonplace of human beings into poets he saw only brutal appetite, masquerading in fantastic frippery. And his delight was to strip it bare. All that fancy, all that imagination, all that sentiment had woven round it torn contemptuously away, he gloated with horrid glee over the naked shame of nature. For religious enthusiasm he could discern only physical causes; sometimes he refers it to hysterics or to sexual excitement taking a wrong turn, sometimes to a diseased and disordered brain. More generally he regards it as mere affectation assumed for the purpose of making money or of gratifying vanity by acquiring notoriety. His sole criterion as a critic and judge was unsublimated reason. In his estimate of men he made no allowance for impulse and passion except as indicating depravity or weakness. In his estimate of life and the world generally he saw everything in the clear cold light of the pure intellect. From no mind of which we have expression in record had the Spectres of the Tribe, the Den, the Forum, and the Theatre been so completely exorcised. But, as the eyes of the body may be blinded by excess of light, so the eyes of

the mind may by excess of reason be blinded—by the very power which should give them sight. Of the truth by which men live, mere reason indeed obscures almost as much as she reveals. If life took its colour and its pattern from the philosophy of Swift as that philosophy finds embodiment in his ideal king and in his ideal creatures, how insipid would it become, how torpid, how inglorious! Swift's philosophy is indeed in essence precisely the philosophy of Falstaff in his soliloquy on honour:—

What need I be so forward with him that calls not on me? Well, 'tis no matter; honour pricks me on. Yea, but how if honour prick me off when I come on? how then? Can honour set to a leg? no: or an arm? no: or take away the grief of a wound? no. Honour hath no skill in surgery, then? no. What is honour? a word. What is in that word honour? what is that honour? air. A trim reckoning! Who hath it? he that died o' Wednesday. Doth he feel it? no. Doth he hear it? no. 'Tis insensible, then. Yea, to the dead. But will it not live with the living? no. Why? detraction will not suffer it. Therefore I'll none of it. Honour is a mere scutcheon: and so ends my catechism.

Now, apart from transcendental considerations, apart from sentiment, apart, in fine, from all that Swift ignores, how unanswerable is logic like this, how irrefutable the reasoning! But it is reasoning against which all that constitutes the true dignity and beauty of human life rises in revolt. It would paralyse the wings of the soul, dwarf and blight the heroic virtues, and degrade the whole level of action and aspiration. As Shakespeare's generous enthusiast so well says:—

Manhood and honour

Should have hare hearts, would they but fat their thoughts
With this cramm'd reason: reason and respect
Make livers pale, and lustihood deject.

Swift said himself that his favourite author was La Rochefoucauld, 'because I find my whole character in him.'¹ The remark is significant, and the resemblance in some respects between them unquestionable. But his true prototype was Hobbes. Hobbes had none of Swift's acute sensibility, none of his tense and vehement seriousness, nothing of his Titanism, nothing of his humour. But for the rest the analogy between them was complete. The intelligence of both moved only in the sphere of the senses and the pure reason. Pessimists and cynics by both temper and conviction, they were deficient in all those instincts and sympathies on which every true estimate and every true philosophy of humanity must be based. Both resolved mankind into mere animals, and the Yahoos of Swift are the 'natural men' of Hobbes. Both reduced all that ennobles, all that beautifies, all that consecrates life, to a *caput mortuum*. Both denied practically, and even ridiculed as metaphysical thinkers, what they asserted and maintained as ethical political legislators. Both, in effect, eliminated the element of supernaturalism, and defended religion on civil grounds. Hobbes based its sanction and authority on the will of the State, Swift practically on the will of the State Church. When Hobbes wrote 'It is with the mysteries of our religion as with wholesome pills for the sick, which, swallowed whole, have the virtue to cure, but chewed are for the most part cast up again without effect,'² he condensed what is in essence the argument of Swift. Both, by nature pure despots, regarded the mass of their fellow-men as fools and

¹ Letter to Pope, Nov. 26, 1725.

² *Leviathan*, ch. xxxii.

knaves, to be ruled with justice indeed, and, if possible, with clemency, but to be ruled with a rod of iron.

) But it must not be forgotten that, if this anti-ideality and cynicism found its intensest and most powerful expression in Swift, it was essentially characteristic of the age into which he was born and in which he died. That age may be compared to a deep valley between two eminences. On the one side are the heights to which the enthusiasm of the Renaissance and the enthusiasm of Puritanism had elevated the national spirit; on the other side is the ascent sloping upwards to the equally lofty tablelands of the idealists of the New World. Between the year of Swift's birth and the first administration of Pitt, it may be safely said that in all that ennobles and in all that beautifies human life and human nature England had reached her lowest level. The morals and temper of the London of the Restoration would have disgusted the Romans of St. Paul, while much of its literature would hardly have been tolerated by the friends of Trimalchion. After the accession of Anne, it is generally supposed that the evil spirit of the preceding era was exorcised, and that a new and good spirit entered in. And this is to some extent true. The example set by the Queen herself, the decency and decorum observed at her Court, and the writings of Addison and his circle, undoubtedly exercised a salutary influence on society. But all that was touched was the surface. The change was more apparent than real. The filth, the cynicism, the inhumanity, the unbelief of the former age underlay—a foul substratum—the specious exterior. The accession of George I. rendered concealment no longer necessary,

and with some slight modification all became as all had been before.¹ Wherever we turn we find variously diluted and variously coloured what we find condensed in Swift. What is Prior but the poet of disillusion? His most elaborate poem was written to show the nothingness of man and of the world, his *Alma* to ridicule metaphysics, his most successful tales to laugh romance to scorn; his best lyrics are but cynical trifles. What is Gay but an elegant fribble, who ordered a flippant jest to be inscribed as his epitaph?² Even the fine genius of Pope is without wings, and many of the passages which exhibit his powers in their highest perfection are directed to the ignoble purpose of degrading his species. Mandeville's *Fable of the Bees* is as shameless a libel on humanity as the *Voyage to the Houghlunhms*, and his *Virgin Unmasked* would have disgraced Wycherley. In the *Richardsoniana* we have the very alcohol of cynicism. The greatest painter of the age devoted his talents to bringing into prominence all that is most humiliating and odious in man, and the pens of De Foe and Smollett vied with the pencil of Hogarth in depicting and heightening moral and physical ugliness and depravity. Nor is this spirit less apparent when it finds urbaner and more refined expression. The

¹ For the temper and tone of the England of Swift see particularly Hartley's *Observations on Man*, ii. 441, not published till 1749, but written many years before; Butler's *Preface to the Analogy*; Warburton's *Dedication to the Divine Legation*; Whiston's *Memoirs*, Part III. pp. 112-213; Voltaire, *Lettres sur les Anglais*; Montesquieu, *Notes on England*, where he says, 'Point de religion en Angleterre; si quelqu'un parle de religion, tout le monde se met à rire'; Hervey's *Memoirs*; the *Suffolk Papers*; Atterbury's *Representation*.

² Life is a jest: and all things show it.

I thought so once, and now I know it.

correspondence of Pope, of Bolingbroke, of Lady Mary Wortley Montagu, the conversations recorded by Spence, the *Memoirs* of Lord Hervey, and, indeed, the greater part of the polite literature and all the *ana* of the age, are the records of a society which, with *Que sçais-je?* for its motto, and *Nil admirari* for its creed, prided itself on its superiority to enthusiasm, to sentiment, to the ideal. If we turn to theology and philosophy, we find ourselves on the same low level. When Reid wrote, 'Philosophy has no other root but the principles of common sense; it grows out of them; it draws its nourishment from them; severed from this root its honours wither, its sap is dried up, it dies and rots;' and when Pope wrote

Good sense, which only is the gift of Heaven,
And, though no science, fairly worth the seven,

they merely expressed what has expression everywhere in the writings of their immediate predecessors and contemporaries. It was the age of the Deistic Controversy, of the sermons of Wake, Gibson, Sherlock, and Hare. The test of religious truth was social utility—its sanction, reason. 'I send my servants to church,' said Anthony Collins, 'that they may neither rob nor murder me'; and if he spoke as a freethinker he adduced what was practically the chief argument of the most orthodox theologians of that day in favour of supernaturalism. As the apostle of ideal truth not simply in the technical but in the comprehensive sense of the term, Berkeley stood absolutely alone. To eliminate as far as possible the transcendental element from religion, and to show how life

¹ *Inquiry into the Human Mind*. Introduction, p. 4.

may be sustained upon a minimum of moral and spiritual assumption, appears to have been the main object of the divines and moralists of those times.

But to return. Thackeray, in speaking of Swift's last days, has finely said: 'So great a man he seems to me, that thinking of him is like thinking of an empire falling.' The expression is not exaggerated. Swift is the one figure of colossal proportions in the age to which he belonged. Nay, we may go further. Among men whose fame depends mainly on their writings, there is, if we except Aristotle, Shakespeare, and perhaps Bacon, probably no man on record who impresses us with a sense of such enormous intellectual power. He has always the air of a giant sporting among pigmies, crushing or scrutinising, helping or thwarting them, as the mood takes him. Immense strength, immense energy, now frittering themselves away on trifles, now roused for a moment to concentrated action by passion, interest, or benevolence, but never assuming their true proportions; never developing into full activity—this is what we discern in Swift. We feel how miserably incommensurate was the part he played with the part which Nature had fitted him to play; how contracted was the stage, how mighty the capacities of the actor. In his pamphlets, in his two great satires, in his poems, in his correspondence, is the impression of a character which there is no mistaking. And it is not among philosophers, poets, and men of letters that we are to look for its prototype or its analogy, but among those who have made and unmade nations—among men like Cæsar and men like Napoleon.

A comparison between Napoleon at St. Helena

and Swift in Ireland has more than once been drawn. With two great distinctions between them, namely, that Napoleon was, morally speaking, an essentially bad man, and Swift an essentially good man, and that the one was without heart and the other with the heart of a woman, it would be possible to institute a parallel not simply between their relative position as exiles but between their temper and characteristics. Both scorned the homage which they punctiliously exacted, and the prizes for which they fought. Devouring ambition, finding in itself not merely the motive but the centre of action, and originating, if partly from the lust of dominion, partly also from the restless impetuosity of superabundant, nay almost preternatural energy, was the ruling passion of both.¹ Egotists, despots, and cynics, each owned no equal, each had no real confidant. The one towered over his kind on the sublime heights of power, the other in the proud solitude of his own consciousness. What was potential in the one found full and unimpeded expression; what was potential in the other perished undeveloped in embryo. But the genius which could indemnify itself for the lack of the material and conventional symbols of supremacy by writing *Gulliver's Travels*

¹ To this constitutional restlessness, to this morbid activity of mind, which was so striking a trait of Napoleon, Swift frequently refers. Thus in a letter to Kendall, dated February, 16⁹¹/₂₂, he says, 'A person of great honour in Ireland used to tell me that my mind was like a conjured spirit that would do mischief if I did not give it employment. It is this humour which makes me so busy.' Again, in a letter recently printed by the Historical Manuscripts Commissioners, 'I myself was never very miserable while my thoughts were in a ferment, for I imagine a dead calm is the troublesomest of our voyage through the world.'

was in essence of the same superhuman type as the genius which half realised universal empire.

What Swift suffered in failing to attain the prizes which his haughty spirit coveted is only too plain from his diaries and correspondence. His pride amounted to disease. He was always on the watch for fancied slights. If a great man left a letter unanswered for a few days, or a friend let fall an ambiguous word, he was miserable. A man passing him in the streets without touching his hat or a woman failing to drop a curtsey seriously discomposed him.¹ To whatever degree of mere intimacy he admitted a person who could amuse or entertain him, he guarded his dignity with the most jealous care. 'He could not,' says Deane Swift, 'endure to be treated with any sort of familiarity, or that any man living, his three or four old acquaintances with whom he corresponded to the last only excepted, should rank himself in the number of his friends.'² His superiority to envy, of which he had not, we are told, the smallest tincture, his indifference to literary fame, and his scrupulous truthfulness in all that related to

¹ To confine illustrations to the diary at Holyhead—'The master of the packet boat hath not treated me with the least civility, altho' Watt gave him my name . . . yet my hat is worn to pieces by answering the civilities of the poor inhabitants as they pass by. . . . I am as insignificant here as Parson Brooke is in Dublin. By my conscience, I believe Cæsar would be the same without his army at his back. . . . Not a soul is yet come to Holyhead except a young fellow who smiles when he meets me and would fain be my companion, but it is not come to that yet . . . if I stay here much longer I am afraid all my pride and grandeur will truckle to comply with him.'

² *Essay on Swift*, p. 361.

himself, had their origin in the same lofty consciousness of supereminence.

Such were the characteristics and temper of Swift. And it would seem as if Fortune, perceiving what opportunities Nature had given her for malicious sport, had in some spiteful mood resolved to make his life her cruel plaything. Everything that could depress, annoy, and irritate was his lot in youth. His early manhood, initiated by the fatal blunder he made in taking orders, miserable in itself, involved him in deeper miseries still. An

abandon'd wretch, by hope forsook,
Forsook by hopes, ill fortune's last relief,
Assign'd for life to unremitting grief;
For, let Heaven's wrath enlarge these weary days,
If Hope e'er dawns the smallest of its rays¹

—it was thus that he could write of himself at a time when most men are bounding blithely from the starting-post of life. Whenever a ray seemed to pierce the gloom it was always illusory. Hope after hope glimmered only to be extinguished. Even the paltry prizes he despised were beyond his reach, and his forty-third year found him eating out his heart in an obscure Irish vicarage. Then came power and eminence, without the glory and without the guerdon. A dictator and an underling, a despot and a tool, for nearly four years of his life, all that could pamper and flatter, and all that could gall and irritate his arrogant and sensitive spirit were his mingled portion. With exile as the reward of services great beyond any expression of gratitude, in that exile were accumulated

¹ Verses on Sir W. Temple's Illness and Recovery, written at Moor Park in 1693.

tenfold all causes of irritation, till irritation became torture, till torture goaded passion into fury. And brooding over the life of this unhappy man, wretched alike in what he owed to Nature and in the spite of Fortune, hung a phantom horror. As there can be no doubt that Swift was never insane, and that the maladies from which he suffered had no connection with insanity, so there can equally be no doubt that he was himself convinced of the contrary—was convinced that he carried within him the gradually developing germs of madness, and that his terrible doom was inevitable.¹

It has been sometimes supposed that Swift's rage for obscenity, so inconsistent with the austere purity of his morals and with his aversion to anything approaching indecency in conversation, had its origin in physical disease—that it was, as it so often is, a phase of insanity. But it is perfectly explicable without resorting to any such hypothesis. An observation of his own furnishes us with the true key—a nice man is a man of nasty ideas;² and he was one of the nicest and most fastidious of men. But its expression in its most offensive forms is to be attributed partly to misanthropy, intensifying this depraved sensibility, and partly to a desire to furnish dissuasives from vice. Of such poems as the *Lady's Dressing Room* Delany observes, and probably with perfect justice, that they were 'the prescriptions of an able

¹ This is placed beyond doubt by the well-known incident recorded by Young in his *Conjectures on Original Composition*. The incident almost certainly occurred in or about 1717. See Scott, i. 443-44.

² *Thoughts on Various Subjects*.

physician, who had the health of his patients at heart, but laboured to attain that end not only by strong emetics, but also by all the most offensive drugs and potions that could be administered.' He was, in truth, doing nothing more than the Saints and Fathers of the Church have habitually done, and with the same object. There are passages, for example, in St. Chrysostom and in St. Gregory, which are as nauseous and disgusting as anything that can be found in Swift. But this plea cannot be always, or indeed generally, urged in his defence; and how, in allowing himself such licence, he could see nothing incompatible with his position and behaviour as a clergyman, must remain a mystery.¹ Something is no doubt to be attributed to the age in which he lived, something to his constitution, and more to his rage against his kind. What is certain is that, as his misanthropy intensified, his imagination grew fouler and his filth became more noisome.

II

The writings of Swift are the exact reflection of his character, variously expressing itself on its various sides. Affectation and pretentiousness were his abhorrence; for literary fame he cared nothing, and

¹ What is still more surprising is that, although these productions appeared anonymously, it was no secret that they were from the pen of the Dean of St. Patrick's; and how Swift, who in private life and in conversation never forgot and never allowed others to forget the respect due to his cloth, could expose himself to the derogatory retorts which his licence in this respect provoked is inexplicable. Yet so it was. See a ribald poem called *The Dean's Provocation*, which professes to account for the reason of his writing the *Lady's Dressing Room*.

he had therefore no inducement to aspire beyond the natural level of his powers. He wrote out of the fullness of his mind, as impulse or passion directed, practically, for the attainment of some immediate object, or idly, to amuse himself. To books he owed comparatively little. Butler was his model in verse. If he had any models in prose, they were the tracts of Father Parsons, and one of the most powerful political pieces extant in our language, Silas Titus' *Killing No Murder*. As a political pamphleteer, Swift is without a rival. Fénelon observed of Cicero, that when the Romans heard him they exclaimed, 'It is the voice of a God;' and of Demosthenes, that when the Athenians heard him they cried, 'Let us march against Philip.' The remark indicates the distinction between Swift's political pieces and the political pieces of such writers as Bolingbroke, Junius, and Burke. Compared with him, they appear to be but splendid sophists, maintaining with all the resources of rhetoric, and all the experience and skill of practised advocates, a case for the prosecution or a case for the defence. If the truth is of little moment to us, we concede to admiration what we ought to concede only to conviction. But the impression produced by Swift is the impression produced by a powerful and logical mind, with no object but the investigation of truth, amply furnished with the means of ascertaining it, and convinced itself before attempting to convince others. His profound knowledge of human nature and his experience of affairs enabled him to bring every point home, and to assume naturally, and with propriety, an air of authority such as in any mere man of letters would be affectation.

Swift is a poet only by courtesy. Good sense, humour, and wit are as a rule the distinguishing characteristics of his poetry, though, as Scott well observes, the intensity of his satire sometimes gives to his verses an emphatic violence which borders on grandeur, as in the *Rhapsody* and in the poem on the Last Day. But, if Apollo disowned him, he was not altogether deserted by the Graces, as *Cadmus and Vanessa* shows; and of the attributes of the poet a touch of fancy may certainly be claimed for him. It would, however, be doing him great injustice to deny his claim to a high place among masters of the *sermo pedestris*. As descriptive pieces his *City Shower* and his *Early Morning in London* are pictures worthy of Hogarth; his adaptations from Horace and Ovid are eminently felicitous and pleasing, while the verses on his own death and the *Grand Question Debated* are among the best things of their kind. Some of his other trifles, particularly his Epistles, will always find delighted readers. His verse, though too mechanically monotonous, is unlaboured and flowing, his diction terse and yet easy and natural. In the art of rhyming, an accomplishment on which he especially prided himself, he has few superiors, and his rhymes are as exact and correct as they are ingenious and novel. Even the author of *Don Juan* spoke of himself as contemplating Swift's mastery over rhyme with admiring despair.

It is, of course, as a humorist and satirist that Swift is and will continue to be a power in literature. Models as his political pieces are—in their style nervous, simple, trenchant—in their method lucid, logical—in their tone masculine, vehement—few perhaps but

historical students will turn to them, for to none but historical students will their ephemeral matter be intelligible. Two-thirds of his other writings have long ceased to be of interest to the many, but the *Battle of the Books*, the *Tale of a Tub*, the *Arguments against abolishing Christianity*, the *Modest Proposal*, a dozen or two of his poems, and *Gulliver*, will keep his fame fresh in every generation. Here, then, are to be found the qualities upon which his claim to a place among classics must rest. They are easily distinguished. The first attribute of genius is originality, and Swift was essentially original. It is true that he was indebted to others for the hint of his three chief satires, but, as he has himself observed, if a man lights his candle at his neighbour's fire it does not affect his property in the candle which he lights.¹ Probably no other writer with the exception of Dickens has borrowed so little. His images and ideas are almost always his own; his humour is his own; his style is his own. In a well-known passage he claims to have been the first to introduce and teach the use of irony:—

Arbuthnot is no more my friend,
 Who does to irony pretend,
 Which I was born to introduce,
 Refin'd it first, and taught its use.

This was not strictly true, as he had been anticipated by De Foe, whose *Shortest Way with the Dissenters* appeared nearly two years before the earliest of Swift's writings had been published. But a title to a place among classics depends not merely on originality—it depends also on quality, on the intrinsic value and interest of what is produced. Swift's serious reflections

¹ *Advice to a Young Poet.*

and remarks are the perfection of homely good sense —shrewd, trenchant, pointed, enriching life with new and useful truths. But his good sense is without refinement, without imagination, and without subtlety. The sphere in which his intelligence worked and within which his sympathy and insight were bounded was, comparatively speaking, a narrow one. He had the eye of a lynx for all that moves on the surface of life and for all that may be found on the beaten highway of commonplace experience, but the depths he neither explored nor perhaps even suspected. In his innumerable aphorisms, generalisations, and precepts it would be impossible to find one which either indicates delicate discrimination or reveals a glimpse of ideal truth.

His style has in itself little distinction and no charm, but for his purposes it is the more effective from the absence of distinction. A pure medium of expression, it owes nothing to art, for he disdained ornament and he disdained elaboration. To eloquence he makes no pretension. Proper words in proper places was his own ideal of a good style, and he was satisfied with attaining it.

As a master of irony he has few if any equals. It was his favourite weapon, tempered as finely as that with which the Platonic Socrates disarmed Protagoras and Hippias, and as that with which the author of the *Provincial Letters* lacerated the disciples of Le Moine and Father Annat. But the fineness of its temper constituted its chief resemblance to the irony of Plato and Pascal. It is without urbanity, without lightness, and without grace. Austere and saturnine, bitter and intense, it would seem strangely out of place as

the ally of pleasantry; and yet seldom has pleasantry been so happily mated. Other humorists may move us to merriment and convulse us with laughter, but the irony of Swift is a source of more delicious enjoyment, of more exquisite pleasure. In its lighter forms it springs from a nice and subtle perception of the unbecoming and the ridiculous in their lighter and more trivial aspects, tempered with scorn and contempt; in its severer, from a similar perception of the same improprieties in their most impressive and most serious aspects, tempered not with scorn merely but with loathing, not with contempt merely but with horror and rage. The extremes are marked by the Dissertations in the *Tale of a Tub* and by the *Directions to Servants* on the one side, by the *Modest Proposal* and the *Voyage to the Houyhnhnms* on the other. And the mean is in the *Voyage to Brobdingnag*. It is in irony that Swift's humour most generally finds expression, and always finds its most characteristic expression. And naturally. Wherever intelligence of clairvoyant insight, however narrow its area, together with a calm or contemptuous consciousness of superiority, is united with acute sensibility and with the keenest perception of the difference between things as they seem and things as they are, irony will always be the note.

The attitude of Swift towards life and man is precisely that of Juvenal's deity—*ridet et odit*—he laughs and loathes. And his humour is the laughter. It is never good-natured. It is always sardonic, presenting a complete contrast to that of Cervantes and to that of Shakespeare. When we turn to the line which Shakespeare put into the mouth of Puck, 'Lord, what

fools these mortals be!' and to the *Tempest*, and then to the *Voyage to the Houyhnhnms*, and to the poem in which the Deity dismisses his cowering creatures from the judgment bar, as too despicable to be damned—

I to such blockheads set my wit!

I damn such fools! Go,—you're bit—

we measure the difference between the humour 'which sees life steadily and sees it whole' and the humour of the mere Titan.

Swift forms one of an immortal trio. In the writings of Addison will be mirrored for all time the image of a beautiful human soul. Humour genial and kindly as it is exquisite, wit refined and polished as it is rich and abundant, and a style approaching as nearly to perfection as it is perhaps possible for style to do, will unite with the charm of his character in keeping his memory green. If the poetry of Pope has not the vogue it once had, the fame of the most brilliant of poets is secure. He may not have the homage of the multitude, but he will have in every generation, as long as our language lasts, the homage of all who can discern. He stands indeed with Horace, Juvenal, and Dryden at the head of a great department of poetry—the poetry of ethics and satire. But the third of the trio will as a name and as a power overshadow the other two. Before his vast proportions they seem indeed to dwindle into insignificance. And what figure in that eighteenth century of time is not dwarfed beside this Momus-Prometheus? Among men, but not of them, at war with himself, with the

world, and with destiny, he set at naught the warning which Greek wisdom was never weary of repeating—

Born into life we are, and life must be our mould.

He was in temper all that Pindar symbolises in Typhon, and all that revolts Plato in the inharmonious and unmusical soul. And so, while his writings bear the impress of powers such as have rarely been conceded to man, they reflect and return with repulsive fidelity the ugliness and discord of the Titanism which inspired them. Without reverence and without reticence, he gloried in the licence which to the Greeks constituted the last offence against good taste and good sense, and out of the indulgence in which they have coined a synonym for shamelessness—the indiscriminate expression of what ought and what ought not to be said. A cynic and a misanthrope in principle, his philosophy of life is ignoble, base, and false, and his impious mockery extends even to the Deity. A large portion of his works exhibit, and in intense activity, all the worst attributes of our nature—revenge, spite, malignity, uncleanness. His life, indeed, afforded a noble example of duty conscientiously fulfilled, of great services done to his kind, and of an active benevolence which knew no bounds. But it is not by these virtues that he will be remembered. He will live as one of the most commanding and fascinating figures which has ever appeared on the stage of life, and as the protagonist of a drama which can never cease to interest the student of human life and of human nature. In every generation his works will be read, but they will be read not so much for themselves as for their association. The fame of the man will

preserve and support the fame of the author. For there is probably no writer of equal power and eminence in whose judgments and conclusions, in whose precepts and teaching, the instincts and experience of progressive humanity will find so little to corroborate.

APPENDICES

I

DR. BUCKNILL'S LETTER

My opinion, briefly stated, is that Dean Swift's insanity was purely accidental, as much so as if it had been brought on by a coup de soleil or a blow on the head; and I think there are even grounds for believing that he had a blow *in* the head, namely, a slight stroke, which was the real cause of his insanity. I use the word *accidental* insanity in contradistinction to what I call *developmental* insanity, such as the mental disease under which Cowper laboured, or the still better example to be found in the insanity of Tasso. If you will read Black's biography of Tasso—an excellent work—you will see how curiously and gradually he developed into the madman he became, and how clearly the forewarnings of lunacy are to be seen in the still sane periods of his life.

But there was nothing of this kind in Swift. If Swift had developed into a lunatic on the lines of his sane character, he would have been a very different kind of 'person of unsound mind' to the poor fatuous creature whose vitality survived his intellect in the manner I have read of him. I think I could form a not improbable guess of the kind of madman Swift might have developed into under a strong hereditary tendency, but the history of his

case is not of this kind. It is the history of physical disease, and I venture to assert that the details of the disease which have come down to us are sufficient to enable us to form a not improbable diagnosis of the case. It was, no doubt, a case of what you call fatuity, and what doctors call dementia—that is, loss of mental power. There was no delusion, so far as I remember; but there was this peculiarity—the inability to find words for the expression of the poor remains of thought, although phrases did now and then find utterance under unwonted stimulus. It was, in fact, a case of aphasia with dementia, leading to the expectation that, if one could have seen the brain, a clot, or the effects or remains of a clot, would have been found on or about the third frontal convolution.

I think the psychology and pathology of aphasia have been added to our store of medical knowledge since Sir William Wilde wrote his notes on the closing days of Dean Swift, and I am not sure that he makes any comment upon the often repeated fact that Swift was unable to find words to express his thoughts.

You will gather from the above what my answers must be to your questions, and yet, perhaps, it may be well to answer them categorically, and therefore permit me to say that in my opinion—

A. There is sufficient evidence to render a correct diagnosis of Swift's mental disease possible.

B. There are records of numerous cases in which the phenomena are parallel.

C. It is not physically possible that Swift's fatuity at 75 originated from a surfeit of green fruit when he was 23.

D. The sane part of Swift's life was not likely to have been affected by the latent presence of the insanity.

This question, which I have answered last, seems the most interesting and important, seeing that the ignorant public are but too ready to refer the peculiarities of genius

to madness, and that, when a great genius does become insane from some accidental cause, Dryden's lines are only too apt to be quoted.

II

WRIT 'DE LUNATICO INQUIRENDO' AND REPORT
OF THE COMMISSION

GEORGE the Second by the Grace of God of Great Britain France and Ireland King Defender of the faith and so forth. To our Trusty and welbeloved the R^t honb^{le} Luke Gardner Esq^{re} Eaton Stannard Esq^{re} Recorder of the City of Dublin Phillip Tisdall and Bolayn Whitney Esq^{rs} John [?] William Cooper and Dr Thomas Trotter [or Troller] Sr James Somervill Ald^m John Macaroll Ald^m Percival Hunt Ald^m Kirkland Pearson Ald^m Robert King Thomas Lehunt and Alexander M^cAuly Esq^{rs} William Harward and John Rochfort Esq^{rs} Charles Grattan and Bellingham Boyle Esq^{rs} Greeting Whereas it is given us to understand by the petition of the Reverend John Grattan and the Reverend James King that the Rev^d Doctor Jonathian Swift Dean of S^t Patricks Dublin hath for these nine months past been gradually faileing in his memory and understanding and of such unsound mind and memory that he is incapable of transacting any business or manageing conducting or takeing care either of his Estate or person. We being willing to provide a remedy in this behalf do command you three or more of you that you repair to the said Doctor Jonathian Swift and by all proper ways and meanes you Examine him and moreover by the Oaths of good and lawfull men by whom the truth of the matter may be best known you diligently Inquire whether the said Doctor Jonathian Swift be a person of unsound mind and memory and not capable of takeing care of his person or fortune as aforesaid, and if he be, how long he hath been so, and of what Lands and Tenements Goods and Chattels the said

Doctor Jonathan Swift was possessed off at the time he so became of unsound mind and memory or at any time since and what is the yearly value thereof and who is his next heir and such Inquisition as shall be then found you or any three or more of you shall openly and distinctly make return thereof to us in our Chancery in Ireland on the third day of November next under your seals and the seals of those by whom the said Inquisition shall be made together with this Writ Witness our Justices General and General Governours of our said Kingdom of Ireland at Dublin the twelfth day of August the Sixteenth year of our Reign.

DOMVILE.

Ex^t Ed Madden dep^y Clk
of the Crown and Hanaper

At the back of the Writ:—

The Execution of the within Commission appears by
y^e Inquisition hereunto Annexed

JO AUFRER
LU GARDINER
PHIL TISDALL
J ROCHFORT
W^m HARWARD
BELL BOYLE
PERCIVALL HUNT
JOHN MACARELL

An Inquisition Indented taken before us the Right Hon^{ble} Luke Gardiner Esq^r Philip Tisdall Esq^r John Maccarrell Percival Hunt Aldermⁿ William Harward John Rochfort and Bellingham Boyle Esq^s Com^{rs} by virtue of a Commission of our Sovereign Lord George the Second of Great Brittain France and Ireland King Defender of the Faith and so forth Bearing Date the Twelfth Day of Aug^t in the Sixteenth Year of the Reign of his said Majesty at the Deanery house of S^t Patricks Dublin the Seventeenth

Day of August in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hund^d and forty two

The Names of the Jury of honest and lawfull men sworn to enquire and Examen of and into the matter Specified in said Co^mission

EDW^d HUNT Aldermⁿ
 JOHN ADAMSON Merch^t
 ROB^t DONOVAN Merch^t
 ARTHUR LAMPREY Chand^r
 THOM^s HAMILTON Brewer
 JOHN WALSH Carpenter
 JOHN COOKE Hosier
 JOHN CUMMIN Carpenter
 ERASMUS COPE Jeweler
 JOHN SICAN Merch^t
 JOHN MARTIN Currier
 JOSHUA BARRINGTON Merch^t

Gentlemen

Your Issue is to try and Inquire Whether Doctor Jonathan Swift in the annex^d Co^mission be a person of unsound mind and Memory and not capable of takeing care of his person or fortune and if he be, how long he hath been so and of what Lands Tenem^{ts} goods and chattels the said Doctor Jonathan Swift was possessd off at the time he so became of unsound mind and Memory, or at any time since, And what is the yearly value thereof and who is his next Heir.

Wee Find that the Rev^d Doctor Jonathan Swift in the annexed Co^mission named is a person of unsound mind and memory and not capable of taking care of his person or Fortune and that he hath been soe since the twentyeth day of May last past And Wee Further find that the said Jonathan Swift was on the said twentyeth day of May, and still is seized and possessed of Lands Thytes [? Tithes] and Tenem^{ts} of the Clear Yearly value of Eight hundred pounds sterling and also possessed of goods and chattels

to the value of ten thousand pounds sterl^s. And It does not appear to us who is his next Heir

ED: HUNT [Seal to each name]	JOHN MARTIN
JOHN ADAMSON	JOSHUA BARRINGTON
ROB: DONOVAN	W ^m HARWARD
ARTH ^m LAMPREY	J: ROCHFORD
THO ^m HAMILTON	BELL BOYLE
JOHN WELSH [sic]	LU GARDINER
JOHN COOKE	PHIL TISDALL
JOHN CUMIN	JOHN MACARELL
FRAS: COPE	PERCIV ^{ll} HUNT
J ^{no} SICAN	

At the back:—

Swift { 1742
Comission of Lunacy
and return

rec^d 19th Aug' 1742

INDEX

- Arabian Nights*, the, indebtedness of *Gulliver's Travels* to, 205
- Arbuthnot, member of the Scriblerus Club, 98; his character and writings, 98
- Atterbury, member of the Scriblerus Club, 95; his character and writings, 95
- BARRETT, his *Essay on the Earlier Part of the Life of Swift*, 5
- Beddoes, Dr., his views on Swift's malady, 239
- Berkeley, Earl of, Swift's chaplaincy to, 52
- 'Bickerstaff, Isaac,' pseudonym of Swift, 62
- Boyle, Charles, his part in the Phalaris Controversy, 41
- Bucknill, Dr., his views on Swift's malady, 240, 269
- Burnet, Bishop, attacked by Swift, 117
- CARTERET, succeeds Grafton as Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, 183; his behaviour with regard to the Drapier Letters, 186
- Chaufepié, his article on Swift, 157
- Congreve, at school with Swift at Kilkenny, 20; member of the Scriblerus Club, 94; his character and writings, 94
- Craik, Mr. Henry, his *Life of Swift*, 10
- DE BERGERAC, Cyrano, indebtedness of *Gulliver's Travels* to his romances, 205
- De Callières, possible indebtedness of the *Battle of the Books* to his *Histoire Poétique*, 42
- Delany, his *Observations*, their merits and defects, 3; references to, 35, 70, 72, 151
- De Morgan, his observation on *Gulliver's Travels*, 203
- Dingley, Mrs., the constant friend and companion of Esther Johnson, 150; her testimony against the alleged marriage of Swift and Esther Johnson, 150
- FORSTER, his *Life of Swift*, its merits and defects, 7; references to, 22, 23, 27, 28, 43
- Fortescue, member of the Scriblerus Club, 100
- GAY, member of the Scriblerus Club, 96; his character and writings, 96
- Goethe, his *Stella*, 157
- Goodwin, indebtedness of *Gulliver's Travels* to his *Voyage of Domingo Gonzalez*, 205
- Grafton, succeeded by Carteret in Lord Lieutenancy of Ireland, 183
- Guiscard, his attempted assassination of Harley, 84

HARDING, printer of the *Drapier Letters*, arrested, 186; tried, 187; the Bill thrown out, 187

Harley, Earl of Oxford, leader of the Tories, 64; Lord Treasurer, 69; his difficulties, 79; stabbed by Guiscard, 84; his popularity, 85; his correspondence with the agents of the French king, 86; member of the Brothers' Club, 90; quarrel with Nottingham, 104; his activity in the question of Swift's preferment, 114; quarrel with Bolingbroke, 119; his resignation, 122

Herbert, Sir Thomas, possible indebtedness of *Gulliver's Travels* to his *Travels*, 205

Hobbes, compared with Swift, 251

'**Hope**, Thomas,' pseudonym of Swift, 170

Howard, Mrs., Swift's intimacy with, 216

IRELAND, condition of the country in the earlier years of the eighteenth century, 159; her natural advantages, 159; her treatment by England, 160; famine and pestilence in, 161; torn by feuds and enmities of race, politics, religion, 163; the Middlemen, 164; the provincial gentry, 164; crushing statutes of the English Parliament, 165; the degraded Protestant hierarchy, 166; Grafton succeeded in Lord Lieutenancy by Carteret, 183; deplorable condition of the country in 1729, 221

JOHNSON, Esther, Swift's first meeting with her at Moor Park, 30; her personal ap-

pearance and character, 73; her settlement near Swift in Ireland, 76; Swift's relations with her, 76; his *Journal* to her, 78; her alleged marriage with Swift, 146; the evidence against it, 147; the evidence for it, 151; general summary — testimony strongly against it, 156; the verdict of the world, 157; her death, 218

LESSING, his *Miss Sara Sampson*, 157

Lucian, indebtedness of *Gulliver's Travels* to, 205 (*bis*)

Lyon, Dr. John, his testimony against the alleged marriage of Swift and Esther Johnson, 150

MACAULAY, his estimate of Swift, 16, 27

Madden, Dr. Samuel, his testimony as to the alleged marriage of Swift and Esther Johnson, 152

Mason, Monck, his *History and Antiquities of St. Patrick's Cathedral*, its merits and defects, 6

Monck-Berkeley, his *Enquiry into the Life of Dean Swift*, 4; reference to, 154

Montaigne, compared with Swift, 210

NAPOLEON, compared with Swift, 255

Newton, Sir Isaac, his testing of Wood's copper coinage, 178 (*note*), 179

ORRERY, Lord, his *Letters*, their merits and defects, 2; reference to, 151

Oxford, *vide* Harley

- PARNELL**, member of the Scriblerus Club, 97; his writings, 97
- Partridge, John**, his almanacks and 'Isaac Bickerstaff's' pamphlets, 61
- Philostratus**, indebtedness of *Gulliver's Travels* to his *Imagines*, 205
- Plato**, Swift's knowledge of and allusions to, 39 (note 2)
- Pope**, member of the Scriblerus Club, 95; compared with Swift, 210
- RABELAIS**, compared with Swift, 46; indebtedness of *Gulliver's Travels* to his *Pantagruel*, 204
- SCOTT**, his *Life of Swift*, its merits and defects, 5; reference to, 203; his views on Swift's malady, 239
- Sharp, Archbishop**, probable indebtedness of the *Tale of a Tub* to a sermon of, 47
- Sheridan, Thomas (senior)**, friend of Swift at Dublin, 195; his misfortunes, 195; his house at Quilca, 196
- **Thomas (junior)**, his Memoir of Swift, 4; reference to, 152
- Solinus**, possible indebtedness of *Gulliver's Travels* to, 205
- Stanhope**, his attack on Swift, 16
- Steele**, Swift's breach with him, 116
- '**Stella**,' vide Johnson, Esther
- Sturmy, Samuel**, passage from his *Mariner's Magazine* copied by Swift in *Gulliver's Travels*, 206
- Swift, Abigail**, mother of the Dean, 18, 19, 20; her character, 25; her death, 63
- **Deane**, his *Essay on Swift*, 4; reference to, 152
- Swift, Godwin**, uncle of the Dean, 18, 19, 21, 24
- **Jonathan**, father of the Dean, 18
- **Jonathan**, the Dean, better known to us than any other writer of his age, 1; his autobiographical writings, 1; his several biographers, their merits and defects, 2; a greatly maligned man, 11; his benevolence and kindliness, 12; his real attitude towards religion, 13; his ancestry and parentage, 17; his birth, 18; his boyhood, 20; his career at College, 21; his flight to England, 24; his first residence at Moor Park, 26; tutor to Esther Johnson, 30; his early poems — their extreme badness, 30; his departure from Moor Park, 31; his ordination, 32; his churchmanship, 32; his life at Kilroot, 36; the episode of 'Varina' (Miss Waryng), 36; his second residence at Moor Park, 38; his studious industry — his favourite authors, 38; the *Battle of the Books*, 41; the *Tale of a Tub* — its purpose, methods, and characteristics, 43; his second departure from Moor Park, 49; his chaplaincy to Berkeley, 51; his return to England, 53; the *Discourse of the Contests and Dissentions between the Nobles and the Commons in Athens and Rome*, 53; the *Discourse on the Mechanical Operation of the Spirit*, 54; his eminent position in Whig literary circles, 55; disappointed of preferment, 56; his views on the Established Church, 57; the *Sentiments of a Church of England Man* and the *Argument against Abolishing Christianity*, 59; the *Project*

for the *Advancement of Religion*, 60; 'Isaac Bickerstaff's' pamphlets on Part-ridge, 61; his grief at his mother's death, 63; his de-legacy to England in connection with First Fruits and Tenths, 64; his formal breach with the Whigs—its justification, 65; his haughty demeanour—his power of will and intellect—his personal appearance and manner, 69; his renewed acquaintance with Esther Johnson, 72; his attitude with regard to women, 75; the *Journal to Stella*, 78; editor of the *Examiner*, 80; *Remarks on a Letter to the Seven Lords*, 85; *A New Journey to Paris*, 87; the *Conduct of the Allies*, 88; his pre-eminence in the Brothers' Club, 89; his proposal for an Academy, 92; the Scriblerus Club, 94; his literary activity—attack on his political opponents, 104; *Remarks on the Barrier Treaty*, 107; *Some Advice to the October Club*, 108; the *Letter to a Whig Lord*, 109; miscellaneous lampoons, 110; his immense influence at this period, 111; his services long unrewarded—successive disappointments, 112; appointment as Dean of St. Patrick's, 115; his insulting reception in Dublin, 115; his return to London, 116; his breach with Steele—the *Importance of the Guardian considered*, 116; his attack on Burnet, 118; the *Public Spirit of the Whigs*, 119; his political views, 120; his return to Dublin, 123; his miserable condition at this time, 123; difficulty of his position in Dublin, 125; his loyalty to

Oxford, 126; his anti-Jacobite views, 128; the *Memoirs relating to that Change which happened in the Queen's Ministry in the Year 1710*, and the *Enquiry into the Behaviour of the Queen's Last Ministry*, 129; the *Memoirs of the Last Four Years of the Queen*, 130; his private life at this period, 132; his acquaintance with the Vanhomrighs, 133; his conduct towards Hester, 135; *Cadenus and Vanessa*, 136; distortions of the story of their acquaintance—the charges against him examined, 139; his real relations towards her, 142; his alleged marriage with Esther Johnson—important bearing of this question on his whole career, 146; the evidence for and against the marriage, 147; summary of the evidence, 156; his indignation at the miserable condition of Ireland, 167; the *Proposal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufactures*, 167; the *Essay on English Bubbles*—the 'Swearer's Bank,' 170; the *Last Speech and Dying Words of Ebenezer Elliston*, 171; the *Drapier Letters*—the first, 176; the second, 178; the third, 181; the fourth, 184; the fifth, 186; the sixth, 187; his immense popularity throughout Ireland, 188; his ecclesiastical views—his violent attacks on the Whig Bishops, 189; his vehement hostility to the Nonconformists, 191; his scheme for the formation of an Irish National Church, 193; his endeavours to improve the condition of the inferior clergy—the *Letter to a Young Clergyman* and the

Essay on the Fates of Clergymen, 193; his personal misery—his misanthropy, 194; his friendship with Sheridan, 195; his visit to England, 197; his visit to Walpole, 199; *Gulliver's Travels*—its characteristics, 201; its object, 208; its defects, 208; its immediate success, 212; his departure for Dublin, 214; his return to England, 215; his literary and political activity at this time, 215; his last departure from England—the Holyhead Diary, 217; his grief at the death of Esther Johnson—the *Memoir and Character of Esther Johnson*, 218; the melancholy character of his last years, 220; the *Short View of the State of Ireland* and the *Modest Proposal*, 223; *Judas*, the Irish Bishops, and other pamphlets, 224; the tithe question, 225; the *Legion Club*, 226; the *Art of Polite Conversation* and the *Directions to Servants*, 228; his poems of this period, 229; his correspondence, 230; his activity in benevolence—his immense popularity in Dublin, 231; rapid failure of his mind, 233; his death, 236; his malady, 237; his temper, 241; his views of life and mankind, 242; his attitude towards Christianity, 245; his lack of sentiment—his reference of all questions to pure intellect, 248; compared with Hobbes, 251; his colossal capacities, 255; compared with Napoleon, 255; his pride, 257; his miserable circumstances, 258; his indecency, 259; his writings an exact reflection of his character, 260; his political pamphlets, 261; his poems,

262; his humorous and satirical writings, 262; his style, 264; his irony, 264; his attitude towards life and mankind, 265; general summary of his characteristics, 266; the Writ 'De Lunatico Inquirendo' for his examination, and the Report of the Commission, 271

Swift, Thomas, grandfather of the Dean, 17

— William, great-grandfather of the Dean, 17

TEMPLE, Sir William, his reception of Swift at Moor Park, 26; his kindness to Swift, 28; Swift's departure from Moor Park, 31; his invitation to Swift to return, 37; his part in the Phalaris Controversy, 40; his death, 48

Thackeray, his attack on Swift, 16

Throp, his case with Colonel Waller, 226

'VANESSA,' *vide* Vanhomrigh, Hester

Vanhomrigh, Hester, her passion for Swift, 134; his conduct towards her, 135; her settlement in Dublin, 137; her departure from Dublin, 139; her death, 139; examination of the false reports of Swift's relations towards her, 139; the facts of their intercourse, 142

'Varina,' *vide* Waryng, Miss

WALLER, Colonel, his case with Throp, 226

Walpole, his behaviour with regard to Wood's copper coinage, 175; Swift's interview with him, 199

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>Waryng, Miss, Swift's acquaintance with, 36</p> <p>Whitshed, Chief Justice of Ireland, his trial of the printer of the <i>Proposal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufactures</i>,</p> | <p>168; his trial of Harding, 187</p> <p>Wilde, Sir William, his views on Swift's malady, 239</p> <p>Wood, his patent for copper coins, 173; the patent withdrawn, 188</p> |
|--|--|

PRINTED BY

SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE
LONDON

1917	100	100
1918	100	100
1919	100	100
1920	100	100
1921	100	100
1922	100	100
1923	100	100
1924	100	100
1925	100	100
1926	100	100
1927	100	100
1928	100	100
1929	100	100
1930	100	100

1917
 1918
 1919
 1920
 1921
 1922
 1923
 1924
 1925
 1926
 1927
 1928
 1929
 1930



14 DAY USE
RETURN TO DESK FROM WHICH BORROWED
LOAN DEPT.

This book is due on the last date stamped below, or
on the date to which renewed.
Renewed books are subject to immediate recall.

SEP 4 1967 8 8

AUG 21 '67 -5 PM

FEB 17 1968 3 6

REC'D LD FEB 3 '68 -1 PM

JAN 04 1969

MAY 0 2 2007

LD 21A-60m-2,'67
(H241s10)476B

General Library
University of California
Berkeley

89
64



